

The Pack Rule Number 1 No Mates -

[1,176 words]

3/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 D

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Fifty-One

DOMONIC

04 511

The moment Marcus comes to be charges at me and tries in shift. Unlike Doc Vas, I left Marcus unchained, because I just dust find him to be much of a threat. A -becnie he's not a pure shiter, and I doubt he has mastered many of the natural takes as per shifter possess. I-because he's still weak from the tranquilisers we pumped into his and is not at full strength And C-bese him to attack me. The hate I feel for him is so powerful. It beer foto rip him apart if he's not chained to the wall

The idiot stumbles directly into the line of my knife and live for lang path to his right side. As his shift goes awry,

3, his poses fade back into hands and lis fangs retract completely.

Bastard, he hisses from the ground.

grin at him, baring my teeth and licking him in the shoulder as 1 swipe my krule aling his other side. His blood begins to pool on the conne heaves estatically with pain.

I study the man for a moment while he bleeds. He's tall, with a muscular build and head full of black hair and bead to match. The faint lines that power dark amber eyes are the only real signs that he is a day over forty, He's actually not bud looking. But despite his commonly cheming features, I know what he in done - I know what kind of twisted fuck he is inside. So I lick him a couple more time in the stomach, junt a piss him off. You know, get his blood pumping a bit.

Did you know that the faster you breathe, the faster your blood pumps out?" I ask him

Hepples. I know who you are," he snaps. "You're that dirty mongrel who stole my mate."

I have to laugh at that. I can't help it. The man is delusional. "Your mate? Really? You slang rapist fuck. First of all, I hiss, "Lab rats don't home mates, Shitters have males. He tries to stand and I kick him again - this time in the face. A loud cracking sound echoes down the hall as the back of his skull meets with the brick of the walls, I kneel in front of him and whisper, "You? Are not a real shaber... and Draven Ifly mate. Not yours. The only connection you will ever have to her again - is through me"

"Like hell," he growls out. "She's mine goddamn it! Her mother give her to me when she was senten

Bullshit, hiss and kick him again.

He curls up and resches Granting and groaning into the dirt of the concrete floor. Hale me all you want, but it's true. Isabella loved me. She didn't want me to be alone after she died. He grins, his teeth coated with blood. "But if I'm being honest-Draven's pay was mach better than her mother's and after Id had some of t I couldn't touch Isabella ever again."

it him by his throat and knee him in the groin. He goes down in a heap, bent over and blending out.

I lean close to his ear. "Don't worry," I say softly. Tim not going to kill you today. Im going to take you apart one piece at a fucking time until your hurt has no choice but to stop beating"

He attempts to grow but it comes out as more of a grunt of pain. Fuck you!" He spits.

I flash him my dimples and twirl my knife in one hand. "I have some bad news, I play the tip of my knife near his chin and study his gaping wounds. "Your doctor is dead and you don't appear to be healing. Whatever shall you do?" Tean see him attempt to control his panic as his eyes bulge and he gases down the hill,

chuckle. "He's gone. The moment things got a little rough he sold you and your son put and I set him free by ripping off his goddamn head," I chuckle. "And he was one of us bom skjer. Unlike yout

Marcus yells. "Bullshit! He would never is neck stretches and his mouth falls open wide enough to swallow my dick when he yells, "Van Vas! Can you hear me?"

I laugh, "A man without a head can't hear you. And a cat without a head can't save y Standing up, I step out into the hall and shut the retal bar, kicking him bork inside. He told me about your son About how much he hates you."

1/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 00

Chapter Fifty-One

Marcus eyes go wild and again he attempts to shift, but falls. "Fuck you!"

He even told me where Lesi" Te

"Tullshit!" Marcus shouts, "He doesn't even know where Leo ist Only I do." "Really?" I shrug. "So you mean to tell me that Leo dat get here by boat?" ¥51%1

The light fades from his eyes, all anger falling into despair and I kose right then tha kod was right about the host. Now I'm rely wondering who that message

"How? He did-didn't know that! He should know that

Hmm. At least there's one thing this bastard cares about. Even if it's the only thing

grin at him, showing my fangs. "You're right. He shouldst and he didn't. I only suggested it and thanks to you, it's confirmed."

"What?" Marcus snaps, "I never said that!"

I hiss, You didnt have to. Enjoy the rest of your day. See you tomorrow."

"No! Wait!" He shouts as I enter the elevator and press the button to head back up. Wait!!! The doors close against the sound of his bedog and I smile That was almost fun. A great form of stress relief

When I step back onto the first floor, my eyes meet Rainiers "Have someone patch him up. I want to cut him open again monu

Jesus Dom. You re covered in blood Rainier sighs. "Would it be better just to kill the guy quickly? Think of all the man-power he's wasting."

I roll my eyes, "You have somewhere to be?"

"he groans. "I guess not."

Do me a Labor Rainier," I say, thinking about how close we are to finishing this

What a thar?

Give James a call and tell him I said to rehire Margo," I place my hand on the door and prepare to leave, "She can start work again next week" "What?" Rainier snaps. "Why? Didn't she almost cost you your gir

I mod, turning to face him. "Yes. And that's exactly why I need her to come back to work

Rainier huffs, his eyes falling away with disappointment. "You're the boss."

I stepped out into the rain and headed straight for the Hummer, my eyes scanning the landscape and trying to ignore the heavy ache of my heart.

Tomorrow night would be the night of the full moon. If we didn't find Leo by tomorrow our entire pack was going to have to head to the land. Fuck keeping watch over the bar. It could burn for all I cared. But Draven? There was no way I was going to chance Leo getting anywhere near her.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,172 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Fifty-Two

DOMONIC

515

I race toward the docks at a dangerous speed. Sliding through the rain without any concern for me or anything on the streets. Once I pull into the parking lot, I see Koda outside the main office talking to the dockmaster so I park and head over. There was a boathouse a few nights ago. A real fancy one, Dockmaster P

Parks is crying as I walk register his vessel. By the time I went outside to get his signature, he was gone. But as I ask around and see if any of the boys remember the name of the dame

He stopped and bought some food and fuel. But he didn't think because I don't remember it."

"What did he look like? Koda asks.

The old man squints his eyes, nodding at me in greeting. He was young. About twenty. With a scruffy black beard and shoulder length hair. Sort of a yellow-brown. He was big too. A little shorter than you Dom, but not by much." The old man sighs, "He didn't tip anybody neither looking. Didn't smile even once."

"Thanks Parks," Koda says, turning toward me. Give me a ring if you spot

but whatever you do don't try and detain him."

Is he dangerous?" P

Parks hisses.

I nod. "Yes he is"

"You boy going out in the water?!"

We're pulling out in the powerboat though. Can you tie the yacht up for me?" ask, my attention locking on the fog rolling in and the turbulent waves offshore hinting that the storm is far from over

Course I can. That's what I'm here for. Be careful out there. No one should be out the water tonight."

Thanks for your concern," I tell Parks as Koda and I walk toward pier twelve,

We step slowly, the rain coming down hand mer both of us as we silently scan the train. "Who was that message from Koda? I want to know and I want to know

ΠΟ

Koda shrug, "Quinn.

Quinn. Makes sense. Tell me this," I say, climbing aboard one of the three vessels we have docked. "Are you sure the girl isn't in on anything with Lea? Because you're the one that left her there with Draven. And I swear to God if anything happen to her because of it, I'll kill that bitch.

I watch him carefully as his shoulders tense and he works for control. If I didn't know better, I'd think I just pissed him off. He's so angry, I can see his claws begin to curl out from his hands. What the fuck?

"She isn't in on anything," he growls and I see a flash of fangs before he schools his features. His face melting back into indifference, "She's innocent."

I growl at him, my fangs slicing out. "So you say. But, I think I reserve judgement I'll hear her side of the story. And if she's lying"

"She not," he growls back.

Thead for the control, turning my back on Koda. I feel weight shake the boat and spin around is shock.

To coming with you, he informs, taking a seat.

I laugh. "Fuck if you are. Someone needs to be stationed at the dock to watch for Leo

"I'm coming with you," he says again, in a clear, detached voice. "I called Grant. He's ready on his way. He'll keep watch on the docks"

I stare at him for a cool minute before he meets my eyes and what I see in his gaze looks a whole hell of a lot like defiance. "What's going on with you Koda? There's something you're not telling me. What are you leaving out?!"

1/3

51%

Chapter Fifty-Two

He shrugs, moving past me to flip the convertible cover closed, shielding us from the rain. "We should get going. Soon we will have a visibility and I want to do a couple of laps around the island before we dock."

I nod, facing back to the control panel and turning the key, "Are you on duty?" I yawn, leaning out onto the open hatches and pushing for full throttle

"I am," he concedes, grabbing the dash as we hit by a particularly nasty swell.

"And you're brushing it off just to protect my mate?" I side-eye him, watching for any shift in his features, but he doesn't so much as twitch.

"Of course. Why else he says, not giving an inch.

But he been doing a whole lot of talking these days, More than he ever has. And starting to wonder why.

BRAVEN

"I can't see shit out of these windows! I say to Emily, my face pressed up against the glass in the living room, I feel like I've been

day waiting for Domene to show back up. But every time I glance toward the wharf is nothing but waves.

"Why don't they have a fireplace here? Wouldn't it be sooo cozy to relax around the ?" She comments, studying the brick mantle on one side of the giant flatscreen telev

"Right." I agree. "That is odd. Domonie doesn't have one at his house either." My eyes shoot to where Quinn is busily cutting onions for the new Emily is planning to make.

"Hey Quinn! Yes my queen!"

I laugh. "Is there a fireplace in this house anywhere?"

"Ouch," he snaps, dropping his knife and grabbing for the towel hanging on the wall, what? Hests, wrapping his finger and glaring my way

Oh shit. How's he gonna explain the when it heals in the next five minutes?

you out yourself dufus?" I giggle.

He shakes his head, his eyes falling on Emily. "Nah. It's just a scratch. What were you asking?"

Do you guys have a fireplace here?" I repeat,

His gaze goes dark. "Um nn. But if you're cold I can burn the heat up."

Emily rolls her eyes. No. Not cold. I saw some manhmallows in the pantry and we wanted a fire to mast them over.""

"Well too bad ladies. Fires are no buena. He smiles my way. They're against our religion."

[sort. "What the hell does that mean? Why?"

"Long story," he whispers, going back to his onions.

"Whatever," I sipe. "You know they sell fake ones, right?"

"Do they?" Quinn chimes. "How quaint. Perhaps I will look into that the next time ve a fuck."

I stick my tongue at him and he flips me off.

It is right then that my body goes cold. The familiar feeling of being watched needing over my skin. I freese, then slowly turn my face back to the window. This time, my gage is on the woods around the house. I scan the trees, at least, what I co of them. But I get nothing. No unusual posesient, no visible threat. Still theshners of unese grow stronger. Almost like whatever is out there is smiling my way. I stumble back away from the windows and cud imo the sofa.

My fear must be plain on my face because Emily notices right away Draven? What's ung?

2/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 DO

Chapter Fifty-Two

I clamp my eyes shut, 1-1 don't know just feel

"Draven?" Quinn says, and I feel his hands close over my shoulders, "What is it?"

I open my eyes. "It's nothing. Really. I'm okay. It's just," I sigh. I think there's something in the woods.

Chapter Comments

9

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,457 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 No Maten

Chapter Fifty-Three

DILAVEN

"What?" Quinn snaps. "A

I shake my head no.

bat felt like - like someone was watching de. The sam

at the mods. When you got held

Quinn sight, straightening his hack with

This fagon

(on this idland can get so that wo

"You re probably right,' I comerde, letting go of the beatly I had analized I was bedding

"Of course I'm right,' he quips.

Envily laught, joining him in

se kötchen to atir

That is when we hear it. A shrill unarl, like a feline growled that eroes through the forest outside

51%8

Without asking, I know it's true. He's here. That was him. A panther must be out there in the woods.

My eyes shop to Quinns. His jaw clenches and he grants me a barely perceptible no

"Was that a cat?" Emily gasps. "That sounded like a big, angry at What the hell? Ther tiny island like this one?"

check it out, Quinn says, meeting my cym for a long moment

"Are you crazy?!" Emily screnches. "No way! You can't go out there."

it be possible, can it? I mean how would an animal like that en

"Relax," he tells her, his eyes going heated with her concern for him. There's some ting gear out back. I promise, I'll be fine

Emily hisses, freezing when Quinn puts a finger under her chin and libs her face to plant a quick, soft kiss on her lips.

I swallow my protests, because it's really none of my business, but something about his kissing her rubs me the wrong way I'm not jealous, of course I'm not. However, I can't help but feel like it was wrong somehow. Even Emily herself looks slightly thrown off by the act Libe right back," he soothes her, his eyes glowing. "Whatever happens. Do not come outside. You ladies go upstairs to Demonics room and watch from there. No one can get inside unless you let them in. It's electric entry"

I hod, "Be careful.* *

We lower the beat on the stew and head upstairs to lock ourselves in Domonics mom. I keep the shades closed until I hear Quinn exit the house, opening them when I fil confident he's had a good minute to shift without being seen. Then, I flip the switch on the shades and sit on the floor next to the window that faces the woods. Watching, nervously as the fog only grows thicker and the rain slams down enn harder.

From this high up, I can easily see a good deal of the island and the treetops above the mists. We cant see what's in the trees nor the shoreline behind it and that's what really makes me nervous. Because if Quinn gets hurt, how will we know? Also, the ground surrounding the house are blanketed in a heavy fog so its a bit difficult to get a visual on

anything that might be prowling around the front or back of the house. I'm beginning to feel like we should be downstairs instead. Where

will be obvious what's out there if it approaches the large glass walls.

Now I understand why their homes are practically but from windows. They like to see as coming for them. As wolves, I'm sure, it's a proper defense strategy, but for humans? It's just downright scary.

going to go downstairs for a moment and take a look around the back and front at the house. I can't see any of it from up here." I will Emily

"You're going outside?" She groans.

"No!" I reassure her. "No way. You can't take a look through all the windows on the first floor. Then I'm going to close the shades"

1/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Fifty-Three

She nods, "Way. I'll be with you,

"No," I reply, "May here. That way,

nothing coming this way from the woods you can shoot me."

"okay," she says. "That's hurry. I'm getting pretty spooked"

I nod, then slowly make my way down the stairs. With each step I take, my eyes are lined in the windows watching for any kind of disturbance in the most funny, the fog is originally what I loved about this place, but just now it's exactly what I love. It's a line...

when it comes to those you love.

The moment my bare feet touch the polished wood of the first floor, I feel them. The yes. My heart begins to pound until it's quivering in

to swallow my fear, telling myself too, but don't wait for

hostage. He just might think he can use me as a bargaining tool.

can't bargain a deal for a loved one, right?

he would need to let me wouldn't let

So, at least, if he doesn't get to me, I don't think it will be to kill me.

- at least I don't think he does. Then I remember, Domenico

Calm down, Draven, Calm down. Deep breaths," I soothe myself, breathing in and out as slowly as possible.

To my relief, the mantra starts to work its magic and my heart rate begins to slow,

I say to myself, releasing a deep breath. I can do this, I'll be fine.

(turn slowly, my eyes studying all the windows as do. The dining room is the closest to the cliff bank and it has the most visibility, so I start there. Combing over what I can see of the ground. I'm looking for anything. Feet, paws, claws, anything. I gasp, my hand lying toward

throat

as I edge closer to the window to inspect the mail about a foot away from the wall

I am, I realize, my body going cold.

outside of the window filling with water from the steady pour of rain are three visible pawprints. Four wide toe marks, and one fat heel. Prints that I recognize anywhere, because I used to find them in the marshes when Marcus would make me play his game. (Oh," I squeal. "God"

I'm about to race back upstairs when loud electric pop is heard

is heard throughout the house and each and every light in the place goes dark

Oh no.

The electricity.

tanerine entry.

Quinn's words, right before he left.

"Holy shit," I breathe.

My brain scrambles as I try to remember something about Les that I should have paid more attention to. Wasn't he staying in something boring as hell back in Florida? But what the fuck was he playing? Something to do with computers.

A plane pines, and I swallow a hung of ear before polling it out.

UNKNOWN-

Hello sin, you've been very naughty.

2/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 DE

Chapter Fifty-Three

"Shit." I tremble. The text jos my memory. That's right. His main subjects were Software Engineering and Ethical Hacking

My phone pings again

UNKNOWN-

Turn around Draven

DOMONIC

"Is that what I think it is?" I ask as our powerboat comes up against the back of the island. "Open the hatch so we can get a better look

Roda flips the switch and suddenly we are being pelted with rain like bullets to the fire. The storm is reging, the sky an unforgiving may horizon with a crackle of thunder that illuminates a shape against the rocks Something bobs there, barely visible through the fog. "Thats a boat," Koda says with absolute conviction,

The closer we get to it, the easier it is to recognize. I kill the engine. I don't want whomever rode in on the craft to be alerted to our presence. Another of lightning flashes over the side of the vessel, its name shining bright for the tiniest of moments. But, it's enough. "The Isabel," I read out loud and I immediately begin to undress. This is a three hundred thousand dollar boat," I say as Koda follows my lead, Shedding his uniform and feeding it to the sea. "If we both go well lose it."

Koda simply shrugs and then dives into the water. A growl rips from my chest, but a moment later, I dive in, saying an unceremonious goodbye to the boat and everything on it. When all this is over, he and I are going to have words. Maybe more I'm beginning to wonder if the restructuring of our pack left him confined. It serps, he doesn't remember who the Alpha is

Taking a deep breath as crest over the top of a wave, I dive lower, beneath the swell, Chasing the distance to the island in less than a minute. The second I reach the shore, I

don't waste any time. Koda is standing there in his wolf form and in a seconds burst of flesh and bones, I am standing next to him.

My eyes are fixed on a heat signature deep in the trees. What is disturbing is not so much what is there, but where it is. The movement is high up. About fifty feet skyward and traveling swiftly from branch to branch.

I know right away what it must be and I pull in a breath from the air above me confining it. The scent hits me like a shot of adrenaline.

There's a panther in the woods.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[975 words]

Chapter Twenty-Two DRAVEN

The beast is staring at me with eyes like silver fire. Eyes that are almost a bit familiar. A wolf that big has got to be a male and this one studies me with the cool intellect of a human being. I am transfixed. My body frozen as the creature scrutinizes me. I can almost feel its gaze caress the exposed flesh of my legs through the glass of the large back windows. Then, as if noticing Quinn for the first time, the wolf growls in his direction. His teeth are bared and ready to rip Quinn's throat out. Snarling and snapping in his direction.

"Oh, shit, Quinn breathes. "Why don't you go upstairs and put some sweats on Draven."

I can't move. "I'm sorry?"

The wolf taps the glass, his claws screeching, sharp and heavy against the window pane.

"Now!" Quinn snaps.

"I-I-I don't want to move."

"Would you rather I left you down here to get them for you?" Quinn chastises, with a slight turn of his head in my direction.

"N-no! I stammer, placing my cup on the island counter and backing out of the kitchen as slowly as possible.

The wolf's eyes follow my every movement, his gaze steady on me as I scamper up the stairs.

Once on the landing I spin around and head for Domonic's room to find a pair of pants.

Wait a minute! What the fuck? How the hell are pants going to help this situation?

"Don't ask questions Draven," I say to myself, grabbing a pair of Domonic's sweats from his long dresser against the wall. Tying the knot in place, the fabric of the legs swirl around me, only going tight at the plump of my ass. Gazing at the open doorway, I take a deep breath. I can't leave Quinn down there with that 'thing'! That enormous monstrous predator.

For a moment - an image of my stepfather flashes into my mind. The size of him in his true form nearly as astounding as the strange gray eyed wolf in the back yard.

Shake it off! That bastard is not a wolf!

No. My stepfather was something far more primal. A creature of nightmares. Something no one would believe he was should I decide to tell them. Sometimes I'm not even sure if I believe it myself.

I shake the memory off once again and descend down the stairs only to find Domonic has returned, his powerful chest bare and heaving.

Holy fucking shit.

And I thought Quinn was covered in muscles.

From the look of things, Domonic's muscles had muscles. I stumble down the last few steps, catching myself just before I crash into his half naked form.

His strong arms, hold me still, frozen, his dark eyes full of a strangely familiar anger, "Why are you awake?" His gaze seemed to assess my clothing, a deep dimpled smile quiking across his face. "You're wearing my clothes." I shrug, my eyes glued to the powerfully bare skin of his deeply tanned chest. "You're not," I breathe, one hand going upward to touch his

1/3

14:03 Wed,

Chapter Twenty-Two

gleaming pectorals, prickled with sweat. I swallow the moan of pleasure the feel of him elicits from my throat and step away. "How are you not cold?"

4

1 eye him. He is wearing running shoes and black basketball shorts. No underwear the outline of his prominent bulge accutely apparent behind the cloth.

Holy Mary mother of God - he is big.

Then my eyes shoot toward the large back windows and Quinn leaning back against the counter as if there hadn't just been a large red wolf on the porch. "Did you just come in from the outside?" I ask Domonic. He nods.

Blanching, I throw my hands up in panic. "There was a wolf out there! Did you see it? It was huge! You need to be more careful!" I ball my hands into fists and pound on his chest. "You shouldn't be wandering outside this time of night without your damn clothes on no less."

-

"I have clothes on." He rumbles with laughter, "The wolf was long gone by the time I walked up." I shove at him, stepping by and knocking him in the groin with my hip. He groans, "Ah, fuck."

"Don't laugh at me," I say snidely. "That thing was enormous and I think I'll be taking you up on that offer to drive me to work from now

on."

"She hates wildlife," Quinn said softly, meeting Domonic's eyes behind my head. "She was scared to death. Especially when the growling started."

I head straight for my coffee, lifting it up and choking on the first sip when I felt Domonic press his arousal into my rear from behind me.

"Maybe she should make sure to be dressed before coming out of my room from now on. Maybe the wolf didn't like seeing her without her pants on around you," Domonic hisses, his hot breath wafting past my ear.

I chuckle, "What?" Then I freeze.

How the hell did he know I didn't have pants on? Where was he?

I turn around, glaring at him. "You were out there. You saw the wolf."

His jaw clenches. "I was out there, but I honestly didn't see the wolf. I did however, see you. And... the wolf most definitely did."

"Don't be weird," I snap. "And don't try and scare me." My eyes fall toward the pout of his mouth and the sensual way his bites down on his lower lip.

He reaches beneath my chin, shifting my gaze upward. "The wolves out here in Port Orchard are sacred. They protect, not harm, you

Su shouldn't be afraid of them."

I sigh, "Fat chance of that happening."

His muscles tense, a tremble coiling through them. Caging my body against the counter with both arms, much like he did that night at the bar, he speaks in a voice laced with darkness. "Trust me Draven, that wolf you saw tonight is way more afraid of you - than you could ever be of him."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,260 words]

Chapter Twenty-Three DRAVEN

Later that night at the bar, the place is packed once again. My bruises have finally healed enough for me to prance around in the tiny Moonlight Lounge crop top Bart has designated as my uniform. The crowd is in full swing and so am I. Charming the patrons, many of which I hadn't ever seen before for a small town this place is quite the tourist spot. I have already collected a new pocketful of phone numbers and a fat stack of bills. Truly, I am loving this job. With the money I've been earning from the tips alone, I'll have a nest egg at the ready in the next couple of months. Then I'll be able to afford my own place wherever I want to be, I can leave if I need to... but - do I

want to?

And just with that thought, my eyes fall on Domonic in the back, sat at his usual corner table with three of his friends.

Before we left for the bar that evening, Domonic had introduced me to seven of the hottest men God had ever granted the Earth with. Of course, none of them were as clit pulsing as Domonic, but they were close runner-ups. He'd said they were all like brothers and had known each of them his entire life. All of them seemed to respect Domonic as a leader, which I found mildly curious.

When an out of town male in black riding leathers enters the bar, the whole of them seem to pause. Their eyes go straight for the stranger as he struts up toward the bar.

"Look at you," he says, grinning at me. "Bartlett finally decided to class up the place, I see."

I quirk up an eye brow, taking in his strongly domoniant frame and golden blond hair. Amber eyes study me with cool calculation as I wipe down the counter and tap into my charms. "He sure did. What can I get you?"

The stranger bites his lip, "Your number for starters, How much will that cost me?"

I laugh, "That's not on the menu Goldie."

He chuckles, "Look at that, already coming up with pet names for me. The man stiffens suddenly, his body tensing. "Domonic." He says before turning around.

My eyes fift to find Domonic stands behind the dude looking terribly pissed off.

"What are you doing here, Gryffin?"

Gryffin? What a pretty boy name that is...

The man, Gryffin, chuckled. "Just stopping through mongrel. Where'd you find this pretty young thing?"

Domonic's eyes go white hot with malice. He steps closer to Gryffin, a slow smile gracing his lips. "She's none of your concern. You're not welcome here, but you know that, so what do you want?" Gryffin's muscles shift beneath his jacket, his body going rigid. "We need to talk."

Domonic crosses his arms over his chest, his gaze falling on me then wandering back toward Gryffin. "I can't imagine why."

Gryffin, turns around, putting his back to Domonic as he shoots me a panty dropping smile. "Can I get two shots of Patron?"

My eyes meet Domonic's who seems to know I am asking for permission to serve the guy. He nods and I answer, "Sure thing Goldie. Coming right up."

"His name is Gryffin," Domonic growls out as I pour the drinks. "Don't get friendly with this pussy."

Pussy? Oh shit, them's fightin' words.

1/3

Chapter Twenty-Three

My eyes widen at Gryffin's slightly amused wink. He giggles, swallowing his drinks whole. "Thanks baby doll. He turns to face Domonic. "Outside?"

Domonic nods then proceeds to follow Gryffin out of the bar - Logan and Grant right behind them.

"Who is that guy?" I ask Bart as he joins me from the kitchen.

Bart shakes his head, "Bad news kiddo. He's not someone you should be talking to. He and Domonic have a bad history."

"Really?" I question. "How bad?"

Bart shrugs, "You'll have to ask him. The bottom line is - his kind don't normally come in here and seeing that he did - something must be up. Whatever that something is cannot be good."

"His kind?" I chirp, serving another customer and collecting, yet another phone number. "What do you mean his kind?"

Bart sighs, his eyes shooting back and forth. "He's a little different than us. Just... trust me."

My eyes narrow as I watch Bart walk back into the kitchen.

This place is getting stranger and stranger and I don't mean the men.

Domonic

Outside in the crisp cool air and surrounding fog, the three of us follow Gryffin to the curb where his bike is parked. "I'd tell you not to drink and drive - but I couldn't care less if you killed yourself, so I won't. A quick glance around tells me that he came completely alone. Gryffin had ridden here unaccompanied - a dangerous thing to do when riding into hostile territory. That in and of itself was cause to worry. Taking a deep whiff of the air, is enough to confirm it. This asshole was the only Lion Shifter within miles.

Gryffin smirks, his amber eyes lighting with amusement as he straddles his ride. "That woman in there she's yours isn't she?"

I clench my teeth, my body tensing as I fight the change true anger always brings forth. "I'm not going to tell you again - she's none of

your concern."

Gryffin smiles, "I could tell you again that we had nothing to do with that night - but I know it wouldn't matter." He lifts his helmet onto his lap. "You should learn to hide it better."

As much as I want to condemn his words - he is right. I do need to hide it better. All anyone ever needs to do is simply approach Draven and my blood heats to near boiling. "What the fuck do you want Gryffin? Why are you here."

He gazes around, seemingly casing the landscape. "Last night - our villa was breached."

"We weren't there-" I start to say, stopping when he holds up his hand.

"Have you noticed any strange smells around here? Any scents that you do not recognize?"

My blood freezes and my eyes must have revealed the truth in them because he nods.

*Something is here. Something different." He puts his helmet on. "I know we aren't allies Dom. We haven't been for a long time, but for this - maybe we should be.

""What is it?" I hiss.

"I'm not sure," Gryffin admits, rubbing his jaw. "But from what I can tell they're feline. But not a lions."

2/3

Chapter Twenty-Three

"They?" My body tenses, my mind going back to yesterday and the danger Draven was in.

Something new? A different shifter? The out of state plates...

Gryffin studies me. "Lets just call a truce for now. You know until we figure this out."

Grant laughs, "Does that mean you're gonna stop breaking into our bar?"

Gryffin jolts. "Your bar? Why the fuck would any of us need to break into your bar. You've got it twisted hounddog. Lions don't sneak

around like that."

"What does?" I inquire smoothly.

Gryffin sighs heavily, as if something has been weighing on his soul. "A lone predator the kind that doesn't travel with others. Except, I think this one does. The type of shifter with no alliance - no respect." He turns the key on the ignition and starts his bike up. "Someone who's come a long way for something he wants very badly. Enough to enter a den full of lions just to sniff around."

"Enough with the suspense Gryff - what kind of cat are you talking about?"

"A panther." His eyes lock with mine. "A panther." Then, he revs the engine and right before he rips out onto the street, he adds, "And his

scent is all over your woman."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,128 words]

Chapter Twenty-Four DRAVEN

The lights in the bar had dimmed to a pulsating purple hue as I watched the entrance, patiently awaiting Domonic to come back inside. It has already been five whole minutes and I am steadily watching the clock on the wall ahead of me. I hope he's not fighting out there.

If he was something told me he could handle it. But still, a small, less familiar part of me worried over it still.

Get a grip Draven,

"Hello dear, can I get a cold beer please? Anything dark."

I smile, tearing my eyes from the clock and nodding at the stranger in front of me. Pouring a clean glass full of a black froth, I push it out to him. He takes it from me with gloved hands going around my own, causing me to jerk back. "Thank you, he smiles, revealing gleaming white teeth.

My eyes catch on his mustache, black and carefully clipped. His jacket, his shirt, his pants, his gloves - all are black. He wears a beanie on his head also black. And although beanies aren't unusual in the late evening it bothers me. "You're welcome. Five bucks even.

-

He smiles again, taking a drink and downing the entire thing in one pull. "Here you go," he says, handing me a twenty. "Keep the change

Draven."

My temperature shoots up. The stranger winks at me, leaving the glass on the table and making way for the restrooms in the back.

Okay Draven... so the weirdo knows your name. So what? People talk. You've already been here a few nights. He could have overheard someone calling out to you or been somewhere nearby when Bart yelled out orders. Him knowing your name does not have to be weird.

But somewhere deep in my soul I knew that it was.

"Draven," Domonic interrupts my thoughts with his sudden appearance

I didn't realize I was still watching the back of the bar and missed him coming back in. I gaze at him and attempt to shake off the chill Mustache Black has managed to drive into my bones.

"Yes?"

Domonic's face is hard, his eyes unreadable. "We're leaving early. We have to talk."

I chuckle, "What? No! Can't you see how busy this place is?"

"Bart and Quinn can handle it. You and I are heading home. This is not a request."

Then he turns around and leaves me to follow.

Is he angry with me? What the fuck?

Grabbing my purse from below the bar I flip Bart off and head toward the front door, where Domonic is waiting.

Once in the car, the heat on full blast, I study his calculated movement as he deftly navigates the fog covered streets toward the hill. He doesn't speak the entire way to his house and when we get there, he flips a switch on the visor and the mechanical gate behind us closes with a definitive boom..

1/3

Chapter Twenty-Four

"Will the guys be able to get in? I ask, as we park and get out of the hummer.

"Yes," he snaps, leading me toward the back door by my elbow.

His curt response, his grip on my arm, the way he wasn't looking at me it was all getting on my nerves.

"What's the deal Domonic?" I quip once we are inside.

He doesn't answer. Instead, he flips the switch that closes down all the shades around the first floor of his house and begins to make a pot of coffee in the kitchen.

I wait, tapping my foot ungraciously. When he finally turns to look at me, he hands me a cup of coffee which I take gratefully.

"Sit down Draven," he says nodding toward the living room.

My brow furrows and I chuckle darkly. "Okay. Sure."

I take a seat in the corner of the L-shaped sectional and swallow a devastating burn of Columbian excellence. Surprisingly enough, Domonic sits an entire two cushions away. What the hell?

"Now, he says, turning his bright gray eyes on me. "Tell me about your ex.

I chortle. "My ex?" I laugh throatily, causing coffee to slosh out of cup and Domonic to glare my way. "What the fuck for?"

His eyes catch on my bare stomach and he edges a bit closer. "Because I asked you about him. I want to know who he was

I bite down on my lip and lean forward, granting Domonic a nice show of cleavage as I place my cup on the coffee table in front of me. "Why do you want to know about my ex?" I tease, crawling across the couch on all fours until I am seated next to him. His eyes fall heavy and his muscles turned rigid. "I'm serious, Draven."

I giggle, I can't help it. What, is he jealous? Of an ex I haven't seen in three years? Please! "What brought this on?"

"Just humor me," he says quietly. "Who was the last man you had sex with?"

I freeze losing my smile completely. "What does that have to do with anything?"

His jaw clenches, eyes going cold. "So there was someone." His gaze sizzles.

"Excuse me?" I snap. "What the fuck does that mean?" I scoff, "Are you pissed off because I'm not a virgin?"

He shakes his head, although the look he is giving me says he isn't happy about that fact. "It couldn't have been too long ago if his smell is all over you."

What the fuck did he just say?

I glare daggers at him. "His smell is all over me? What the hell? Are you kidding me?"

"AH I can smell when I'm near you is lavender and vanilla but that's because-" He shakes his head, breaking off. "You know what - nevermind that part. Just tell me the truth. Who are you really running from? Your stepdad? Or an angry ex-boyfriend?"

My mind whirls with a barrel of emotions. My nightmares and memories coming forth with deadly force. Each of his words a trigger for why I left Miami in the first place. The disgusted look on his face making me feel small and empty. The way I had been when I was trapped

with that monster and his son. Please," I whisper, my eyes falling shut. Stop this. I don't want to talk about this."

Try as I might I can't stop the quiver of my body as the reality of my past shoots over my soul like a raging river of cold. Suddenly I feel cheap and worthless. Not to mention stupid as fuck for trusting this asshole next to me.

"Draven?" Domonic's tired voice fills my ears as if from far away, pressing me and pushing down on my chest - closing off my air supply.

Hot wet tears begin to stream from my eyes and I am helpless to stop them. The scream that wrenches from my body next is one I've heard time and time again while beneath the weight of a monster. "Noooo!" I yell. "Please, please no!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,030 words]

Chapter Twenty-Five

DOMONIC

Draven is shivering before me, her body quaking with fear.

What the fuck did / do?

I am suddenly alarmingly aware of the hostile stance I have taken with her since finding out from Gryffin that she reeks of a Panther Shifter. All of which stems from misplaced jealousy. Being as the shifter was feline - he had ultimately been much easier for Gryffin to scent. The fact that Draven is my unbonded mate, makes it difficult for me to tap into anything other than her natural aroma. I won't be able to recognize the carry of another's sex on her until she and I have bonded. I mean - I would if she'd slept with someone else recently but such was not the case. All I'm getting from her is the pull the need the recognition that she is mine.

The guys may have smelled him on her and had no idea it wasn't anything but normal. None of us had ever met a panther before. So

none of would have known the scent.

But Gryffin had. He'd known.

So naturally I want to know who the guy is. The smell of another's sex can only last up to a month - unless of course it is mine. So whomever she was with had to be recent - within the span of a couple weeks. Once I bond her, my scent and hers will mingle to become one and the same. But until then - all I will get is her.

But she doesn't know any of this and I just came off as some kind of psychotic overbearing jerk.

Once I bond her? What? Am I going to? No! I can't!

But fuck if I don't want to.

Shit!

I really, really want to. But I can't. That would be selfish since ultimately, she will have to leave.

I reach out for her, trying to soothe her, to bring her back from wherever she'd gone the moment I became such a reckless asshole. She jerks at my touch, her eyes flying open and her lip lifting in disgust. "Don't touch me," she hisses. "Don't you dare."

"I'm sorry Draven," I sigh, my heart clenching at the dismissal I see in her eyes. "I didn't mean to-"

"Fuck you," she snaps. "Fuck you! How dare you? First you call me a liar! Now you want to touch me? Go to fucking hell!"

Then almost in a panic, she reaches into her pocket for her tips and begins counting them. A giant cloud of dismay crests over my person. "What the fuck are you doing?"

She glares at her money, not looking up at all.

Well at least she isn't crying anymore.

Draven? What are you doing???" I ask again.

She finishes counting her bills and stands. "Giving you what you've wanted since I got off the train. I'm leaving." Then she bolts for the

door.

1/3

Chapter Twenty-Five

In that one moment, the whole of my world seems to crash in around me.

The fuck if she is!

I leap from the sofa and catch her around the waist, my arms clamping around her as she fights and claws to get free of me. "Let me go!" She snarls, biting down on my forearm. "No," I whisper, my lips against her ear. "No, no please. I'm sorry. I-

"Fuck you!" She shouts again, writhing and wiggling before sobbing in frustration then freezing completely.

"Draven please. It's late at night and there's nowhere else for you to go. Just stay. Give me a minute please. Just listen to me I-

"Fine," she hisses. "But let me go. I don't want you touching me."

Fuck that hurt.

The burn in my chest is crippling in power. I drop my arms and tumble back onto the sofa, thankful that she doesn't flee. She turns around slowly, her sparkling green eyes full of manic anger.

"You want to know who the last person that fucked me was - is that it?" She snaps, spitting each word like a bullet my way. "Is that what's got you treating me like some sleazy-"

"Hey!" I protest. "I never called you-"

She chuckles humorlessly. "You didn't have to."

I lower my eyes. "Fuck. You're right I shouldn't have-

"I told you!" She interrupts. "I said I wasn't ready to talk about him! I told you to give me some time. But no - you had to push and push and push."

She is angry now, tapping her foot like a madwoman. But as she stands there, her words begin to sink in. Melting against my questions to produce an answer that has been in front of me from the very moment I saw her bruises. Rage. Flaming hot dances through me at the realization.

"No," I choke out, trapping my face in my hands. "Fuck."

"Yes you son-of-a-bitch. Yes."

When I drop my hands to look at her, the despair in her breaks me. Her eyes are closed and she is crying again. Her body trembling as silent tears stream down her cheeks.

What have I done?

I did this. I am an idiot.

I will find that bastard and cut off a piece of him every goddamn day until his heart stops beating.

Draven," I whisper, standing to take her against my body. "It's alright. I've got you now. Please," I say into her hair as she moans against my chest. "Let me hold you. I need to hold you. I'm sorry."

Beneath my chin I feel her nod and I lift her into my arms to carry her upstairs to my room where I sit back on my bed and gently rocked her to sleep for the second night in a row.

2/3

14:05 Wed, Nov 13.

Chapter Twenty-Five

Finally, when all is quiet and she is limp in my arms, I pull down the duvet and settle her against the pillows. Shifting her only enough to take off her shoes and cover her up. While her body still quakes slightly from all of the tears she's shed, I sigh in relief that she is still here, still with me. Safe in my bed.

She almost ran from me. I almost chased her away.

But then, as I watch her, a cold realization hits me.

Not only does this mean her stepfather had probably raped her.

But he is a shifter. And... according to Gryffin - that bastard is already here.

Chapter Comments

5 16

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Twenty-Six

DOMONIC

"Are you kidding me?" Bainier hisses, his body aning completely still with the news it laid on him out Draven a stepfather being a thier.

All twelve of us are sitting around my living room while Daven sleeps upstales. It is half past three am and I am beginning to think I might never sleep again

So that fetal scent that she carries when she first got here it was him," Grant akaleders. Smelled the same around the condo yesterday after the incident - but I didn't mention it because I thought it was her."

I nod, my eyes going to the dark of the second story landing every couple of minutes. The last thing I want is for Dare to catch us discusing her age Leat have taken this conversation elsewhere if I thought that she would be safe bere a hut the fact was-she wouldn't be "Well, it's not hers. It's his." I state in a whisper.

Quin steps toward the front windows which I unshaded when they first arrived and glars out at the darkness beyond. "You Domic? Het carrying his scent?"

I "Yes," I growl, anger surging through me with the thought of what had been done to Drives, I grip the body of the beer bottle in my hands and attempt to

"Christ, all those bruises she had," Bartlett comments, shaking his head as if to scatter the images of his little bartender being assaulted. "I cant one them. No matter how hard I try."

Ind. "Me neither." Glancing up from my beer, I survey each of my brothers. "I want the bastard found. Now that we know his scent, we ne

we need to follow it."""

Logan sighs, its not going to be as strong as it was yesterday unless sound. What are the chances he knows what we and?"

I scratch my chin. "Slim. Gryffin id his demas breached last dight. He's not even sure it was a panther. I haven't had a chance to do any research on it yet, but Timmons, I want you to go home and research all jungle cats that can be found in the US. Pay particular attention to the ones that can be found in Florida

He nod, petting up to leave. "Done. I'll get back to you in the morning

When we go find him, what then?" Andres says, standing near the door to follow Timons." mean I KNOW what-but what I'm trying to mik is-

I scowl, "What Andrew?

"What happens with Drawn after it's done?" Lied finishes for him. His long blond haitalling forward as he lowers his head. "When she's safe,

"All of you," i snap, getting up. "Every one of you already knows the answer to that question. Please don't make me repeat myself. It's hard enough for me to accept

Bartlett sighs and stands, serting that our little meeting is coming to an end. It doesn't have to be that way."

lock on his. "Out. Everyone out Logan and Rainier will start the scouting tonight, then tomamo morning you two will switch with James and Koda

Koda grins in the way that he does when he's been given permission to get violent. His dark blue eyes go feral, "If I find him. I can't promise there will be much left by the time you all get word"

I glare at him, knowing he means what he says. Of all of usoda is the least contained and the most troublesome. His temper borders on dangerous which is part of the mason we made him join law enforcement. He sometimes needs more rules than the rest of us do. Much like his father did.

u will leave the kill for me and that is an order," I demand.

He smirk, nodding. He would heed my words, I knew that, but in Koda's mind all heredad to do for me was been the fucker breathing. That didn't mean the bastard would have all his parts when I showed up. Kod is ruthless that way. A fears killer with war psychotic tendances. It is part of why he is always so quit so reserved. Because when he does lose it? Nothing short of a miracle can stop him. My mother and his father had been best friends, Even after she rated my dad.

"Now get out," I order again, and all-with the exception of Quinn-leave without a backwards glance

1/2

48 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Twenty-Six

'll take first watch, Quinn says when everything is locked up tight, "Go get some Dom. You're on mappy.

"Right, I agree, more than thrilled to be sliding into bed next to Draven for the first time.

Last night I only lay next to her until she fell asleep. After she did, I had gone on a through the woods only to come back to the house and scare the fuck out of her in woll for

She was sured of me

I hated the fear in her eyes as she gasked at me through the window. I wanted so hay for her to see that I presented no danger for her, but then, I realized Quinn was in the Litchen too. At that point all I could see was red. I didn't want him alone with her in those tiny shorts she was wearing. Even though I knew he would

taken over and nearly sent Draven into a fullber never do anything as stupid as touch my mate, I was still furioms. The oninali

If she knew the truth about what I am- she would probably nun screaming. And that something I never want to endure. She might call freal. That would be enough right there to shatter me. I might never recover from

By the time I am done showering, it is already close to four in the morning. Another night's rest having been completely hijacked. When 1 get into bed, Draven lay still as a rock, not shitting in the slightest

Her long black hair is fanned out across the pillows and she is curled toward my side of the bed with a hand out as if waiting for me. My chest tumbles ind burns with the thought

Maybe I should take the couch

I probably should have, but I didn't. Instead, I slide into bed and pull her body into live. Passing out cold with her head on my naked chest. Chapter Comments

14

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Twenty-Seven

DRAVEN

I wake up on Domonic's hand smooth chest. He is fast asleep, his heart hudding wildly in my ears causing me to

Hresting heartrate crazy!

"What the fuck? I whisper.

Tuning my body around to face his sleeping form, I place a hand over his heart and sli
tri calm himself. He doesn't so much as tw% DE

mind powers of totally nonmagical being. Probably on-thed. The man really needs to get
moor sleep...

The events of the night before suddenly flash, though my mind and my mood fakers,
hit," I lens.

I almost left last night. I really wanted to. Pat Domonic demanding to know all those
things the way he did, didn't really make much sette the sadden need to know who live
fucked! Who my eors were???

If I stay which honestly, I do want to do then I will hot plenty of questions for this asshole
when he wakes up. But just now, as I take in the compin early maming sun, just barely
filtering in from the windows edges, and the steady stand fall of Demonic's powerfully
cut chest, all my

Heide know hemd up

the

smiling down at him, I lean forward to place my lips gently on his Kissing him sly, while
stroking one hand over the side of his face. Lifting my head. I allow mysel to stuck him
the way I ye wanted to since I met him. He is so beautiful like this Auburn hair unbound
and softly feathered against the pillow. High sealpred naturally arched and slashed
devastatingly over his barely tied eyes. His lashes are chicker than I realized-
prominently resting upon his cheeks. As migu trails over the place the duvet covers his
waistline and the remarkably large bulge that is dentered there my insides coll Heart

stuttering in my chest, I bite my lip and slide my hand over one blanketed thigh and toward the seat of his virility. The closer my fingers get to it, the lighter it becomes and I have to stifle a moan as his hips jerk upward in his sleep.

Holy shit. I want to touch

-

Watching his face for any sign of his waking, I graze my hand over the hardness of his shaft, my mouth watering at the strength of his unconscious response. I stroke him over the blanket slowly, careful not to squeeze more than a feather's touch. With every inch I trace over, his cock comes to life. Hardening and expanding with a heat that is felt above the coverings. My breath is coming in faster, my eyes glistening as my palm caresses the head of his dick and I moan just a breath above a whisper as I begin to stroke downward, toward the base of his pleasure, he grabs my wrist

I gasp, my eyes daring in shock as he lifts me onto my back and presses his hips into mine. "Shit," I hiss, biting down on my bottom lip and staring up into his

PIE

He doesn't smile, doesn't speak - just presses one knee between my thighs to string are heavily muscled leg under mine. Trapping me against the bed with the book of his ankle, he groans, his hips rolling against my center eliciting another moan from my lips. Staring into my eyes as his hips continued their mechanical ministrations, rotating and pressing in to my heat, he asks. "Do you forgive me for at night?"

I nod

The fire in his gaze dances across the crop top I am still wearing, his erection pushing against my most sensitive parts through my pants. God, how I want you," he whispers, almost as if in wonder, "I want to sink into your heat and bury myself in you until I forget every fucking thing else in my world." Thimie," I moan, battling back and lifting my hips to meet his

"Fuck," he hisses, pressing his forehead against mine before sliding a hand under my arm to lift me into the circular torture of his hips.

"God," I whimper, the intense sensations he is creating getting the better of me as hands shout out to grip the muscles of his arms.

"I could cum just like this, he whispers, his head dipping in next to my ear and his hand groans, his teeth nibbling, rating. I slide one hand over the back of his neck, putting feverish in intensity, his weight crashing into me. I wouldn't even have to enter you if I steaming the side of my face. His mouth clamps down on my neck and his mouth in lighter against the side of my throat. His movements become cum," he adds

1/2

19:48 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Twenty-Seven

4524-2

"Shit, I hiss again as he undulates Tx hips, his hard shift strumming my core, Winding me and winding me until I am like a how aning about to mép. Fuck," I grind out, as his hand releases my ass to slide toward the front of my jeans so that he can button my pants. "I want to touch you," he whispers, unzipping me and tugging down just enough for hand to fit in over my mound. "I just need to such you" he says, almt as if he is talking to himself and not to me. Lifting his head to watch my face, he begins to stroke and caress and fire me into oblivion. His fingers sliding over the top of my shit to bathe themselves in my wetness. My hips beck upward against his palm the massages - hin erection stroking itself against my thigh in rhythm with the

thek of his wis

"Domonic," I moan, my own hand going over his to press him harder at my one I am writhing, my body grinding against him as his movements become quicker with my every gasp. "Task," I shout, as my climax surges and, stilling me against lus hand and forcing my back off the bed. I whimper, trembling against him an he dips his head and groans against my a

He is panting nearly as heavily as I am, his cock still rock-band and pulsing against my leg. Propping himself up on both armis, he studies we a

Then, with the clench of his jaw, he shakes himself and quills away is me, leaving me in a veritable quivering mess,

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,254 words]

Chapter Twenty-Eight DRAVEN

152%

Tomsonic?" I whimper, as he lifts himself off the bed and makes his way toward the broom,

His steps stutter, but he doesn't born around. I have some things to take of Ito shower. Then he disappears into the bathroom and closes the door without looking back. What he just happened

My body heats as I attempt to shake the need to have him between my legs and his on my neck. A ignition of rippling hot energy tumbles att longing stronger than I have ever felt before

I want him on me. I want him to bite me

What the fuck? I place a hand over my neck at the junction of my shoulder. My flesh is throbbing in the spot. Almost as if in need mb it out and the pain slots dies.

But why did he stop!

I think I made it pretty clear of what I wanted him to do to me.

Maybe he's still feeling guilty about last night. Or maybe, he feels like I pushed him in our le escapade by stroking him in his sleep

(did kind of molest hom didn't t

But I'm not sorry about it.

Or... maybe after the waterworks I displayed at his questioning, he was afraid I was on traumatized to duck properly. God. Rolling my eyes I slide from the bed just in I hear the shower go on. Grabbing a imel from his closet and a few items from the bag he brought over from the condo, I make my way out of the room and down the hall to the other bathroom. Opening the door, I don't notice the steam right off. Nope. All I can see in the glistening caramel skin of a taut male ass.

Quinidin shock, his eyes going wide at my obvious approval. "Fuck" He shouts

Scrambling for his towel, he slips on the wet floor. Feet going high enough in front of him that I can see the neatness of his clipped toils - he is momentarily airborne before landing with a ground shattering thud onto the floor. Which places his head right at my feet and his junk on full deploy,

"Nice," I comment, stifling a giggle and laying my towel over his crotch like the hem

"Th-thanks," he groans, wincing as he lay there in shame. "Shower's free

and so that h

I laugh and turned around so that he could adequately cover himself.

"What the fuck?" Dumenit says.

He is standing just behind me probably has been from the moment Quinn landed and the face he wears is not one of moment. In boot, he looks downright stary- If you don't count the water trickling down his abs and the haphazard way he clutches his towel around himself. That part is exceptionally sexy.

"He fell I say simply, shugging my shoulders and going around him to retrieve ander towel. "Are you finished almady?" I ask from his bathroom doorway, noting that he probably isn't, because the shower is still on.

He stumps toward mom the bedroom doorway with so much force that I back against the wall. "What the buck were you be doing?" He snaps, tucking his towel in and placing two hands on either side of my head. I smile wickedly, knowing full well what I am about to say will piss him off. "Nothing last sold him about how you're nothing but a great big tease and he promised

1/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Twenty-Eight

to handle me later."

52-11

His eyes rumour, his body going rigid. That's real oute." He smirks. "You're calling tease? If I remember correctly, I didn't even have to remove your pants to get you to come all over my hand"

I laugh, "Did you hear yourself? Your hand? Really? Even Margo got more than a hand

He meets. "Is that who you want to be? Margo?"

I dare. "Fuck off" I shove him in his skippery chest. He does't so much as bilge, Trend your charity case."

"What?" The anger, so hot and dominant a moment ago dissipates from him yes. You think tim afraid to fuck you. Because of your" He

"Don't!" I snap, clenching my teeth. Do not mention him!*

His gaze gentles as he steps in closer to me, tipping my chin up with one hand. Hes. There's so much that you don't know about me in way I wanted to the way I WANT to would be criminal if I didn't tell you everything fint™

My eyes light, bravery surging through me. I lift my back from the wall and press into him just a touch more. Then, as I lean toward his car, i air hand to front of his towel, smiling when I find he is still as hard as stone. His body shudderes his hips pushing his dick harder into my palm. I whisper. "Then tell me everything

He freezes, his breathing turning ragged as he presses me into the wall is an attempt to contain whatever demon he is battling against. "T.. can b yet."

The phone on his nightstand rings

Tuck," he complains and I think for a minute that he's about to turn around to arser. Instead, his mouth finds mine as he pulls me into a penishing kiss. "Can you tell how much I want you?" Tongue going deep his hands clamp down on my ass and he holds my body flush to his. I moan against his lips, my bead filling back as his mouth travel over my jaw toward that place that aches for his teeth. The phone rings a second time as my nais raked over his chest. "I have to answer he says, ripping himself away from me, Glancing my way, his eyes fall slowly over my body, Gracing me with a deeply dimpled smile, he promises, ater" Then biting his lip he shatches his phone. With one last look at where I stand painting, he stares at me almost lovingly. Then he reaches inside the front of his towel to stroke his dick. Momentarily flashing me and causing my eyes to go wide with the sight of him.

oo the hall whi

Then he strides out the bedroom door and into the hall where I hear him say, "I'm on my way. Don't let that fucker love."

That fucker? Who in the hell is that fucker?

Maybe the peeping Tom that rang the doorbell the other night. Or the blonde cutie the ban Who knows? One thing is for sure... En not getting any more than a clit rub this morning.

I want to go with hin 7 want to know who he's talking about.

Even though I know he probably isn't going to

to let me, I am going to ask. Turning my attention to the shower and steam of his bathroom, I slip-inside and shut the door. I need to shower as fast as possible..

Half an hour later, when I am dressed in a pair of skimpy jean shorts an oversized yellow crop top, I bound down the stairs to find three men in the kitchen who are NOT Domenic "Quisa_Ingan, and... Koda?

At least I think his name Iroda, I can't completely remember. He is the the quietest of the bunch

They are all huddled together, seemingly deep in discussion I saunter into the kitchen and pour myself some

π

"Draven," Logan smiles. So nice to see you again." He eyes my outfit. "Should you may be wearing that? Don't you have any pants available? I

Laughlipping him off and making my way toward the front door to peer out the willows toward the driveway.

2/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Twenty-Eight

Just as I suspected

That asshole left without saying a goddamned thing to me.

"Son-of-a-bitch," I snarl, whipping out my phone.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,342 words]

Chapter Twenty-Nine DOMONIC

I pull up to be the chh in my Humter and park in my usual sport Chack, Away from the hustle of travelers and the Port Orchard Dockyard Closing my eyes for the hundredth time, I try to will my cock to die. I am hard as flock. To a paidal degree. The copper of my pants becoming my freshest corny each time I take a strp, or tilt in my seat. I have pretty much been like this from the time Timeti woke me with her hand on my shit. And nothing

seems to be helping the condition. Especially since witnessing her navel in my bed. The beauty of her a steady huge behind my eyes. Her moans her gasps - her fucking breathing! All are a mounding soundtrack between my ears, begging for me to turn my car back and head but bonne dat Lean add her screaming my name to the playlist. I'm lucky I didn't taste her heat. Ill had? I would have fucked her for sure. Gol... it would have been

Great job. Nose what do you see? Fick

The image of Draven under my tongue sends a fresh bolt of lightning up the bane of my halls and I grip the gear shift with tight knuckles,

Grow up, Domanic. You HAVE had pussy before," I sold myself. "You can shake this

But I can L. Nope. No matter what I try to think about what I try to picture even thoughts of her stepfather don't work,

She's killing me and she's not even here.

Fuck it! I hiss and adjust my parts, Goes its time for everyone to know how big cock is then.

After locking up my car, I note the two motorbikes parked at the edge of the alleyway

Tone is here within

James only mentioned Gryffin on the phone. Who he is here?

After a quick look around, I head for the club's private entrance.

Seated in the back of the club, sharing cock tales with James about a few of the ladies in his pride, are Gryffin and Goose. Goose is Gryffin's second in command and

all around asshole,

Funny shit naming your cub after a stretched neck duck. His mother must have hated him on sight to do such a thing. As it is the guy is annoying as fuck. He also has a chip on his shoulder the size of my dick. Even so, I can understand why Gryff the needed to bring him along. If the stories are true, then Goose's temperament weighs pretty evenly with Koda's. It is never good to be alone in host le territory. Even if it isn't as dangerous for him today as it was three rights ago.

Coching their eyes, I nod them toward my office then turn around to find Margo sting right behind me.

Here we go again.

"If you don't get the fuck out of my way, you're fired," I say casually and her eyes narrow in anger as I shift my body around her, careful not to touch the bitch. "Domonic!" She screeches.

But I ignore her, slamming the door to my office behind me with the edge of my dick,

Not really - but it sure felt like I did. Because every muscle that I move feels like is connected to the door thing,

Fleeting on the couch tonight or Fodrad

Sliding, slowly behind my desk, I edge into my seat with the grace of a ballerina. Be tremendously careful with the weight of the cargo in my pants.

"Shit," hiss, clamping my eyes shut as my lap pulses, swelling with new blood. "Holy shit!"

is all I can do not to grab my cock and beat one out right here.

Maybe I should fuck Margo right qukok

7/3

19.49 Wed, Nov 13 OS

Chapter Twenty-Nine

Guil, heavy and dark, shrouds me with the thought. Unfortunately, that is probably be the only thing that might work. Either I use her to take the edge off or I m Emp at the sight of her bony bicubic hips. Either one is a win. "What's with Marga?" Lames chuckles as she walks through the door, the two lion sh

Too late

lion shifters right behind him.

"Have a seat," I say, not answering him. "You must have a reason for treading through here the morning after I throw you out of the bar. What is it?"

Gryffin smiles, taking a seat to the left of my desk, Goose flopping down to the right. Although there is a sofa along the back wall, James remains standing by the door. Ever vigilant - listening "Yesterday before I got back to the villa, I got a text from Toradora saying someone new had checked into one of the cabins up against Bladin Cr sitting back and propping his feet up on my desk.

I stare at them - his boots. Fighting with myself and how I want to chew his feet of the surface. As if he can feel my intent, he drops then

in the wake.

"How the fuck does that warrant a second visit here?' I growl.

He smiles. The patrons arrived in solid black sedans: Out-of-state plates," he cons.

My body goes rigid. My muscles Lighting up for a fight. "How"

"-do I know?" Gryffin chuckles. Tedora owns every cabin on the northwestern side the creek. They belong to her. Gifts from her dying mother. She checked those fuckers In herself

I glare, "Before or after they breached your villa?"

He nods, as if he knows exactly where I am going with my thoughts After."

I swallow my immediate urge to jump in my car and head toward Blackjack and focus on the unlikely ally on the other side of my desk. So she knew what they were when they contacted her." Azzin he nods.

"And she still rented it out to them"

He grins, "As per my instructions to be on the lookout and welcome all guests. You can thank me later," he says. "I'm thinking a party, with strippers. Lots of balloons. That blond with the big tits out front for sure."

I smirk, "If you take her now then you can keep her"

He laughs, "No thanks! I've got enough females in my den thank you very much."

"Seriously though," I sigh, hating that I am so grateful for his help. "I appreciate this

He loses his smile, his eyes taking on a faraway look. He says, "I know what it feels like to want to protect your queen" His eyes go dark as if remembering someone. "Just promise that you'll do a better job than I did."

I have no idea what that is about, but I nod, sensing a deep withering sadness in One that must have been recent enough to tame him, because the Gry front of me now is a world away from the one that I knew when my mom was still alle, "I promise," I say, like a damned fool.

The world was built on good intentions.

Just then, Margo bursts into the room casting a tray full of drinks.

Oh bet

2/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Twenty-Nine

I roll my eyes, "Who ordered these

Goose perks up, showing his first signs of brain activity since coming into the room. That would be me.

"Of course it was, brook

My phone rings and I pull it out of my pocket, my heart racing up to two hundred when I see the name that flashes on the screen.

"Draven?" I answer, wincing as my dick pulses.

ses anew.

I don't think to get up or get out of the room. Didn't figure Margo quite as stupid everyone else knows she is so I pay her no attention as she slides up next to

me to pour whiskey into one of the empty tumblers on my desk.

"You fucking asshole, Draven snaps, Is it bad that I love it when she talks to me that? Who bar. I wanted to go with you!"

I smile despite myself. 'Never Draven,' I say, "You will never step one foot inside this strip club

Then before I can stop her, Margo leans up next to my face and with eyes on my lap my lap, speaks loudly enough for the entire room to hear hard for me Domonic. Baby, hang up the phone." Chapter Comments

14

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[709 words]

1/3

Chapter Thirty

But I can't. I continue to whisk the evil froth begins in build in the boil.

AND THE PHONE IS STILL FUCKEN WINGING

"Tuck!" I yell, pointing my whisk toward the couch. "Answer the phone or hear it because I don't want to hear it ring one more time"

Kodi nods.

"Thank you!" I snap turning back to my eggs and side stepping Qui as he begins to chop the onions.

"Hello?" I hear Kodi say into the phone and despite my best effort not to listen, I can't help but tune in. "Sorry Cher, she's busy right now taking care of the pups. And she said to tell you to fuck off" I smirk at that, not even bothering to answer as I say. Thank you Kodi. You're my new favorite guy

DOMONIC

Roll. That's all I can see as Kodi hangs up the phone. Hard on problem-solved. All my blood has just been drained into the floor. The thud

to be frozen in shock at my total panic when Draven hung up on me. Fucking lame has his hand over his mouth as if he might be born into the moment, and the two lion shifters aren't even breathing. She is smiling down at me like a damned Chesire cat.

In the blink of an eye I have my hand around her throat and her back slammed against the wall

"Hey, hey whoa?" I hear someone say. but I ignore them.

They know better than to touch me

Margo, for all that she is worth, has the gall to look surprised. "You stupid fucken bitch," I hiss at her, fighting not to squeeze the breath right from her lungs.

"Domonie, baby," she croaks. "She doesn't belong here! you said so yourself."

Fuck what I said," I snap. "Listen to what I am saying now Pack your shit and get the jurk out of this club. And do not come back or rip your goddamned head off. Consider yourself lucky that I'm not making you leave town. Then, I else her, smiling at the handprint that I left on her neck. It won't bruise, afterall, I wasn't actually choking her. Just sort of anchoring her with a five Tackle grip, but I take a great deal of pleasure in just seeing the marks there.

"B-but-" Margu subt. Suddenly James is next to her and ripping her away from me. Thank God. "Domonic! You're mine! We's supposed to be together,"

Holy fuck! No! We're not

"You heard him. Go get your things, James says, half dragging her ass out of my office. "Come back tomorrow and we'll help you find another job

I need to calm down before I head home or I might nail a few pedestrians on my way. Taking a few deep breaths, I funt mye toward the amused looks of the lions still seated across from my desk, Gryffin doesn't seem half as upset as James had been. He chuckles and do the rest of his drink before standing up and gesturing for Close to follow suit.

geme of that rage for Blackjack Creek, Domonic Gryffin winks, heading for the door.

"Gryffin," I say, my mind clearing just enough to remember what we were meeting about.

"Wah

"How many are there?"

His eyes Bare, "Three,"

2/3

AND

Chapter Thirty

Three," I repeat. Are they all-

"No," he interrupts me. "One of them is batter

I reel back a little in shock and he nods.

"Yeah, I know. Weled as fuck. But two of them are definitely shifters."

"Father and son?" I question, gritting my teeth.

He appears thoughtful, then shings. I hadn't thought to check, but I will,"

I nod absently. "Whatever you do. Do not let them leave,

He musts.

Tll call you t

you tonight." I sigh heavily as they walk out the door. "And thanks again."

"No problem," he yells back as I quickly grab my keys and phone to head out.

D520

1 screech away from the club at breakneck speed and ence past Bainier's patrol car without so much as a ned in his direction. Perks of knowing the Sheriff. My s ripping the asphalt with every inch I gain, Fuck those pedestrians,

single most important thing on my mind now, is Draven.

POST COMMENT

Chapter Comments

Marietta Gary

This is the second chapter I have read that has had me in stiches. I have laughed so hard o had tears running down my cheeks.

Visitor

I am loving this!!

VIEW ALL 4 COMMENTS

17

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,075 words]

Chapter Thirty-One THOMONIC

I stare at my house from the driveway, tuning in to all the sounds around the yard and the sounds filtering out through the walls of the house. The place is basically soundproof-well at least it is for humans. But for wolves not so much. In what I en tell, Draven doesn't sound angry, I can hear her laughing with the guys al they trade stories about the stupid shit that goes on inside of the Sherif Station from time to time. I am surprised as hell that one of those voices belongs to Keda

Maybe they coined her that she has nothing to worry about?

Maybe, at maybe, they were able to bring her down from the ledge?"

Ha! Something tells me she's saving the explosion for when I step through the door

And the longer it takes me the anger she is probably becusing

Fuck it. Here goes nothing." I say to myself climbing out of my car and strutting up the will then through the back door.

They all fall silent as I enter, every poor of eyes going straight for Draven. She sits with her legs drawn up on the sofa, her dainty little feet tucked under her ly

Son-of-a-burch those are the litle shorts.

HE

She does not look up. Her pazt is locked on the television in front of her. Quin's eye catch mine and he shakes his head minutely as if to say, stay cal my head back, trying Back you, My attention falls on the other two assholes in the men who still have yet to look my way. Draven a sandwiched bet Lean who dont move at all, not even to smile.

What the fuck?

I shake

Rod and

I stomp toward my fridge and yank out a beer, popping the top diff with my one hand I thug the entire bottle to the head. This at least, grab their attention. They know I only drink that way when I'm about to lose my temper

Not counting yesterday with Draven on the jade.

I stalk toward where the three of them are sat and settle in front of Draven. She miser, cold, frosted green eyes up my frame, her face a mask of indifference

"re blocking the screen," she says i

My blood is boiling and I will my muscles to relax as a growl begins to form deep with my chest. They are way too close to her and my first instinct is to rip them away. And they know this - they fucking know this, but they're playing this out for her For Draven. The one girl no one should be touching but me. My body wants to change. The desire becoming so great that I can feel the hairs on my neck standing attention would not do to expose the truth of my existence right at this precise moment, and I know I should step away, but something holds me anchored to the ground. My feet refuse to move. Probably sensing that I am on the verge of shifting, the two idiots before me, finally get up.

About fucking nur

Koda makes for the coat rack on the wall, shrugging into his jacket and smirking at the entire time. He doesn't say a word as he leaves. Not even to say goodbye. Logan heads for the back door as he is still staying in the condo and he doesn't have far to go to escape my wrath. "Later Draven, he says and I'm angry, glaring at his back as he leaves.

"Why don't you join him for a bit, Quinn," I growl, staring down at Draven as she huts in annoyance, turning up the volume on the television.

"Yeah," Quinn agrees. "I think I do that."

I stare down at her, waiting until we are completely alone to snatch the remote from her hands.

"Hey!" She snaps, pouting her lips in anger

The packing love them.

1/2

19:49 Wed, Nov 13 0

Chapter Thirty-One

They are plump and juicy and wet and I want to bite them so badly that my teeth ache

"Am I finally allowed to explain?" ask quietly, taking a seat as close to her as possible on the couch

She attempts to scoot away from me but I grab her arm as gently as possible, tugging her arm so that she doesn't jerk away.

I don't give a fuck what you do," she seethes. "It's not your girlfriend."

No. But you are mine nonetheless.

152%

Staring at the side of her face, my chest begins to ache. Her midnight black hair falls around her like a curtain, and her breasts are heaving deep the blank look in as her eyes.

She's hurt. I know it. Fuck,

"Draven," I plea softly, stretching one hand over the bare skin of her leg. "I didn't touch that bitch. I swear to God, I didn't

She turns her head to face me and can see the turmoil in her eyes, but she doesn't speak.

"She did that on purpose," I say. "She heard me on the phone with you and said that shit to make you think exactly what you must be thinking right now

Her body shudders, and she glances away. It doesn't matter, she whimpers. I hardly know you. It's not like-".

"It is like

correct her and she whips her eyes toward mine. It is," I repeat, and it's true. I've known since I met her that there would never be anyone else. Even if she never does. Lifting a finger, I trace her lips. Fuck that pissant. I've never touched a woman in anger in all my life until today." Her eyes widen, "What?"

I nod solemnly. "I didn't hurt her, not really. But fuck if I didn't want to. If James hadn't stopped me, I might have."

"James was there?" she asks, relief rippling through her and settling her breath.

** I smile. "He was. And so was Gryffin and so was Goose. We were in my office. Margo was only in there to serve them drinks."

She sighs, her eyes pining, Reaching up with one hand, she catches my finger, then settles my hand in her lap. My body hardens, fighting the urge to dip my finger into the bottom of her shorts.

"I think," she says softly, squeezing my hand. That I'm finally ready.

My dick twitches. "Ready?" I ask, and I bite back a groan. I'm two seconds away from dragging her upstairs when she turns her face toward me and I realize what she

truly trying to say.

Her eyes are dark and woeful. "I'm ready," she whispers. "To talk about my stepfather,"
Chapter Comments

13

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,601 words]

19.49 Wed, Nov 13 D

The Pack: Rule Number 1- No Mates Chapter Thirty-Two

DRAVEN

844-519

I take a deep breath and clutch Domotic's hand a little tighter in my lap. Questioning the decision I just made to talk about Marcus and Leo. This might be a mistake. There's no way of knowing how Domenic will react to everything Thave toy. When I tell Domenic everything about them, he might call me crazy. He might not believe any of it afterward. Because who and what they are is almost as much of a nightmare as the things that Marrun did to me.

Do you want something to drink? Demonic asks gently, letting go of my hand and being from the sofa.

I nod as he goes around the space locking does and flipping the sludes closed. "Something strong please, I request, taking the remote rate; ride nurse on the television. For some reason, I don't want to turn the damn thing all. It's almost conferting to have it on, strange as it may seem.

Domenic returns with a tumbler full of whiskey in his hand and I take it gratefully he sits next to me. Stroking my legs once again with hand, he soothes my nerves with his touch.

I take a large gulp of the busing amber liquid and wince against the taste. The begin. "Marcus Angela met my mom when I age or so, I smile sadly, thinking of the woman I loved so much. She was so in love with him. He would pick her up and take her on best

clubs in Miami. He courted her for about a month before he asked her to marry him I sigh. "Even though I was young, I thought that's what she wanted."

the

I take another deep drink of the whisky, allowing the alcohol to create the false sense of bravery I was going to need to talk about my mother. Domonic remained completely quiet, just listening. His hand securely clasped on one bare thigh

"At first, everything was fine. I mean, he was nice enough to me. His son, Loo, was my age. We moved into his place near the marshes. A big old that best had been in his family for generation. I didn't really like it there. The place was too big, but I managed. I had my own room and it was nicely decorated. Lisa mostly left to himself, but even then I could sense something in him. I could tell he didn't really like me or my mother, but Marcus had him pretty well trained, and he never spoke out against any of us." I take another drink and a long deep breath, smiling slightly when Domonic squeezes my leg in reassurance. It wasn't until my mother began to get sick, that things started to change." My body shudders as my mother's frail, som body flashes before my eyes. "I was fifteen. She collapsed one morning while serving breakfast. That was the first time Marcus showed any hint of what he truly was. Because I caught the look in his eye when she did. He looked annoyed with her. But thankfully, he never let it show with my mother. He started taking her to the doctor and feeding her supplements. Some that I had never seem or even heard of. It was strange. Her medicines would come in the oddest black bottles

"Black bottles?" Domonic questions, his eyes going dark

"Yes," I say, "They looked like regular prescription bottles-I mean they appeared to be other than the color. But the names of the medicines were so weird and because they never let me go with them to the doctor, I had no idea what was even wrong with my mother, Every time I asked, I was told to let the grown-ups handle things and that was that. But by the time I was sixteen, it was clear to me that my mother was dying. I just figured it was some sort of cancer or something. I did my best to shut it out of my mind. Maybe if I hadn't- maybe if I'd questioned this more she might still be here," I shake myself. I know where that road leads and I promised myself long ago, I would stop doing that to myself

Con, Domonic prompts.

"She started sleeping all the time. It got to where I hardly ever saw her," I gulp. "Then one night, I was sleeping in my room and I felt someone touch me

Domonic's hand clamps down on my leg and I meet the anger in his eyes. "And you were still sixteen? He chokes out.

I nod and his silver eyes

eyes flare. He attempts to relax his features,

but i

I can see he is struggling. 'Should I stop?

He shakes his head, not saying a word.

I go on "He didn't do much to me at first. Just pet me. I would wake up with him above my bed, smiling down at and telling me how beautiful I was. It was creepy as hell, but I didn't want to upset my mother so I kept it to myself. It was when I was seventeen, right before my mother died, that things escalated." I shiver when I picture the way Marcus looked that night the desire in his eyes- the threat there. "He started touching me more intimately started having me- I shudder, "-do things for him. It got so bad that I started picking different room to sleep in. It worked for a little while, until he realized what I was doing sigh, downing the rest of the liquor. Then I picked the wrong room. I close my eyes, willing the tears away. "I noticed one day, when I was searching for hiding places, that the house had a basement with a cut. So I hid down there. Ignoring the cold. Ight for sure that was the one place he wouldnt look for me, but I was so, 30

Memory Sequence

41 know you're down here babygid, I can smell you," Mascus said. His heavy boots stopping down the steps in tune with the pounding of my heartbeat. I heard the door lock as he entered the space and I began to tremble in the cot, beneath the old dank blankets I was using. "Three to hand it to you. This is probably the

1/2

19:49 Wed, Nov 13 000

Chapter Thirty-Two

absolute best place for

I heard him walking toward me and I knew he knew i there, but still I hid

He sighed, "Don't you want to know why your mother

I have a secret to tell you. O rather, to show you." He cursed, stepping next to and chair next to the net. He is dying? Don't you want to know why she won t last the night?

Now he had my attention. I peeled down the Hankets slowly. Perring at him through fruchtened eyes, I nodded.

Marcus smiled widely, his shoulder length hlas in the old arm chair and putting his knee.

apprained freshly washed

Mack beard, neatly trimmed. "Come and sit on my lap handed, sitting

I shook my head, nu.

His amber eyes flashed angrily. Then I can just punish you and you will never find com.

He was going to hurt me anyway. This I already knew. So I got up and did as told. My stomach led as I sat there, his arms clotting / wanted to throw up. But meer than that I wanted to know why my mother was dying

slowly slid one hand into my shirt, fondling me as he told his tale. "I have been searching for years for a female companion," he said, unclasping my bra. I shuddered, but remained sitting. "I thought I for fit in your mother, he laughed. Mucus continued to undress me as he spoke and I continued to remain still as a statur. "She will so beautiful when we first met. So full of life. So... sexy. And our doctor said, she was a match, so I believed him." He latched his mo breast and the tears I was holding at bay began to travel from my eyes. "I thought I would change her. I thought... he could change her. After all, he was change my son." He shifted me off his lap and I stared at him. What the fuck was he talking about "Take off your pants," he demanded, stroking himself beneath jeans. When I didn't move, he reached out and did it for me, taking my panties down with them. I trembled as he tugged me back down toward his lap, planting me firmly upon his crotch so that my naked back was against his chest. "God, you are fucking perfect," he sated, licking and biting my shoulder. "You wi

do micely kid.

"My mother?" I reminded him, my voice shrill and panicked.

He had never gone quiet this far before. Never had I ever been made to get completely naked for him,

He chuckled, "Yes. Your mother, Unfortunately," Marcus went on. For her to become what I am, she needed to be younger. For her to change into what I am, her body needed to be fresh" I shivered against the feel of his horrible hands on my breasts, but I remained quiet. Perfectly still. "And do you know what I am? Marcus asked.

wasted no time in answering him. A fucking monster," I based, not hearing him unclip his pants. Not seeing his hands as they began to quiver and change. My eyes were planted firmly ahead on my focal point, the dirty cot that I had been laying on

A fucking monster," he chuckled. "I suppose so."

And that was when I them the first time. His claws. His hands. They were..... changril.

And I screamed.

End Memory Sequence"

Chapter Comments

POST COMMENT NOW

13

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,468 words]

Chapter Thirty-Three

DRAVEN

"Stop," Doormic, says and I notice for the first time that he is kneeling in front of me

1 gave di

- down at him, and I see that he is shaking with rage. Stop"

"Please," Domenic, hisses. "Just give me a minute.

eyes are closed and his hands are locked on my

by thighs. The grip is anything but gentle and I can feel the fury radiating off at me,

I am trembling. Shivering really. My body coming back into itself in shake the horrible memory from my mind. He doesn't believe me. He kicks I should have left out the part about Marcus changing about how his hand became a pawn of a beast. Of a panther. Maybe I should have talked through at the hands of Margus and Leo and not on the monsters they are

But then I would be able to warn him of the danger

No. I had to tell him. He has to know what Marcus is. That way he realizes... these really aren't any way to keep me safe. I'm... doomed.

"You don't believe me," I say softly, a tear escaping my eyes to splash the top of his hand. "You think I'm crazy, don't you?" I choke back a

His eyes snap open and he releases my legs to stand. 'I do believe you. I do, he says she holds my stare. That me, I believe every word. I just need a moment to collect myself. I don't want to snap your legs in half from anger."

As Domotic walks into the kitchen to grab his bottle of whiskey, I marvel at him. He doesn't look afraid. But how can he not be? Knowing what I run from is an inhuman monster. Does he really think that a normal man like him, regardless of how many muscles he has, can fight off a beast? A monster?

He says he beats me. But does he really

Maybe he's just taking the time to decide what to do with me. Maybe he's trying to think of a way to get my crazy ass some help.

How if he dies call someone, I'll just pretend I never said those things.

He doesn't have any proof. 111 be damned if I get locked in some looney bin for speaking the truth.

Stipit Draven!

Domonic takes a deep swig of the bottle in his hand and seats himself next to me "Come here," he says, setting the bottle on the table. I need you on my lap." Han?

"W-why?" I stammer. Thinking for a moment that maybe he's going to trap me there and have someone call a doctor

He sighs, then reaches over and pulls me into his arms. "Because holding you calms my nerves."

Oh I say softly as he buries his nose in my hair and takes a deep whiff.

I'm so sorry about the other night," he says. "So sorry about the way I acted with you didn't know and I assumed something different and I'm sorry."

He's talking about when he demanded to know who I fucked last. When he accused of lying about my stepfather..

I've already apologized for that, remember, I, aching up to stroke his jaw.

His face to stare into my eyes. "I know. But he cuts off "I just needed to apologize again."

I not lowering my head until my lips are on his. I kiss him gently, taking his bottom into my mouth as softly as possible before going to my head.

1/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Thirty-Three

I'm beading to worry. "What is it?"

He shakes his head. "Nothing," he sighs. "I just need you to know that I'm not afraid of him. I want you to trust that I can handle him, and I don't know how to make you believe me." His jaw clenches.

I do believe you because I'm not a fool.

"You haven't heard everything yet, I say. "You don't know what he is. I take a deep breath. "It's more than just his hands that can change. There's no possible way you can beat him. So you see, I had to get as far as I could in the East as I could, Dominic's eyes narrowed, his muscles straining and locking around me. Lowering his head, he says "You remember that guy that you met at the bar, Syifa

I nod and he sighs. "Yes, I remember.

"Well, h

he begins. "There's a mason he came to see me that night."

"Okay. I assumed there was." I say with a laugh,

What the fuck does Griffin here to do with my stepfather?

Demonic gazes up at me, his eyes falling on my lips. "As you well know, there are creatures in this world, who aren't completely human." My eyes narrow and I nod not sure if he's playing me or if he actually knows something. "But what you don't know is that they're not all evil. Some of them are good."

I'm shaking my head. "No. No! Marcus is not good!," I say trembling.

I know, Draven, I know. That's not what I'm trying to get at

My anger flares for a moment. Then what exactly are you trying to say?

His hand strokes over my legs, bringing up my knees to pull me more tightly against his body. "Tell me this," he starts. "When your stepfather fully changed..... what

I draw in a tight breath, my mind whirling

This is it. Either I trust him completely and tell, or I'm from this place now and it never seeing him again.

study him for a moment. His short auburn ponytail and his burned channel eyes. His dramatically cut muscles and expertly inked arms. I picture the dimples of smile and think of the way he touched me just this morning. I realize right then, he is everything I have ever wanted. Even if he's not really mine. Even if we've only known each other a silly week I want him more than I have ever wanted anyone in my entire life. I ache for him. I ache for him. And I can't let him go.

Cue I'm going to tell him. I've only seen in changes twice." I gulp. Both times when he was chasing me."

Domonic shudders, his eyes going dark with an emotion I can't read, "Chasing you," he repeats in a low growl. "He fucking chase you in his other!"

I nod: "Yes. He did." My body trembles at the memory of it.

And what from was that, Draven?' Then he lifts a hand to my chin to burn my face toward his "A panther?"

Teale The point blank look in his eyes telling me he already knows much more than he let on "Yes," I hiss.

He doesn't laugh. He doesn't smile. He only nods as if he already knew that

What the fuck is going on?

"Like I said," Domonic whisper, his hand threading through my hair. "Not all creatures like him ace his forehead to mine. "Do you? Can you trust me?"

and I need you to trust that I will protect you." He presses

2/3

Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Three

"Domonic," I hiss, "What are you not telling me?"

His chest heaves, and he leans forward to nibble my lips, "I told you I had secrets,"

"What secrets?" I gasp.

"Gryffin has secrets too, he whispers, his lips falling on mine as he sucks my bottom lip between his teeth.

LLS STAL

"Gryffin?" I say, half dizzy with the ache that is me throbbing between my legs with his traning kiss. Talon't want Gryffin, 1

I Gryffin," 1 has, kissing him back.

Thank God," he murmurs against my mouth before pulling away. His face goes sei and his hands raise up to hold my face as he white "Gryffin ne of those creatures. The ones that I told you are good," Leere. What? He got to be playing with me. He's got to be,

My mind polls back to last night and what Bant said choot Gryffin. He'd said, his And don'tsomally come in here. Oh shit. He's not

"What is he 1 hiss

"He's a lion shifter, Domonic says as if it's the normalest thing in the world to say and I would call him crazy, accept that would make me an asshole und he's not the only one. But that's not what's important." They to differ

"He's not the only "I stop, my eyes going wide. "A-are you a-d-a lion-

He chuckles, his eyes lighting up briefly before he shakes his head. "No. Not me motion," he says. "Also not what's important."

I glare. Then by all means, Domonic. Do tell me what is

He swallows. "Gryffin came to tell me he scented a different shifter is the are three ghts ago Damonic's hands slide from my face and go amend me once more. Holding me still. Thopping me against his body. I shake my head because he's not making sense. "Wait a minute. Why would he come tell you?"

Dumonic ignores the question, pressing on. "They arrived three nights ago."

"Um," 1 mumble. "Okay. Who did?"

Panthers, Draven Panthers

My blood goes cold.

Chapter Comments

Visitor

where is the next section please

[VIEW ALL 2 COMMENTS?](#) [VIEW](#)

15

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,276 words]

3/3

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Thirty-Four

DRAVEN

"What?" I snap. "H-here?!"

Domanie's arms lock around me as I begin to struggle, my eyes going straight to the shaded windows, yelp of fear leaving my mouth.

"Doven," he couses, trying to get my attention, but my mind is instantly on other things. Like Ase lid Marcus figure out where I'd gone? And how long do I have before he comes for me?

"Let me go, I hiss, fighting against the bands of muscle wrapped around me. I have to go!"

"Draven," he snaps, the timbre of his voice rising as he clamps his hands around my face to meet my eyes. "I need you to listen to me. Please

I shiver, the sight of his handsome face causing me to whimper. I don't want in hurt

I know you think you can protect me," I say, shaking my head. "But you can't. No ongan."

"I can," he insists. "I promise you. Please, relax. I have eyes on him right now. He's not going ampore in any form without me knowing. Please, uy and relax."

Strangely enough, the statement does soothe me a bit. Telling me that I'm at alone this time. Reasoning somewhat that Dominic isnt the only muscle bound meathead looking

out for me. There are eleven others, just as dedicated. And that's not counting the lion shifter he was telling me about.

at the same time I don't consider any of them expendable nor do I want them in danger because of me

"You have eyes on him?" I ask, "What the hell does that mean? You're watching him?"

He smiles, gracing me with those devastating dimples of his and forcing me to bite my lip

"Gryffin and the rest of his pride are keeping tabs on him for the moment," he says, nothing my hair back. I don't want you to worry about a thing.

My eyes bulge. The rest of his pride? Are you talking like a lion pride? Like there are more of them? More shifters?"

He sighs, nodding, his jaw ticking. "Yes. Of course there are. There are shifters all over the world. Many different kinds."

living in a world with actual monsters prowling around me? How common is this?"

They're not all monsters," he growls.

"They are to me!" I snap, lifting myself off of his lap. He doesn't try and stop me this time and I have to wonder why. I study him. He appears crestfallen. Like I've said something to hurt him when I've done no such thing. My gaze narrows, my thoughts taking a dangerous turn but as I note the clench of his fists, the drop of his eyes. Reaching for the whiskey bottle, he takes another long drink, choking slightly and wincing in disgust.

I think for a moment of what Quinn said about the wolf that was outside the house the other night. When he called them guardians and proteges. My body trembles, my muscles quivering with fear. "Are any of them wolves?" I ask. He gazes at me and I note the soft sadness of his eyes, but he doesn't answer my question. My heart clenches with a crushing pain so acute that I almost cry out. "How long have you known about them?"

He strokes his jaw, a slight smile tipping his lips as he stands and heads toward the front door. To block me in? Maybe. Who knows, but the longer I stare at him the more I see his silence as an answer in and of itself. Domenic pulls out his phone and his thumbs go tapping away.

who the fuck is he texting?

"How long have you known about them?" I repeat, gritting my teeth in anger. "Answer me!"

He finishes his past, then pockets his phone. Raising silver eyes bright with fire my way. "All my life," he hisses and I nearly crumple to the ground.

His eyes remind me of that enormous wolf's eyes. The red-brown wolf. The one that outside when he was in the middle of the goddamned night. The one he claimed he didn't see

1/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13 D.

Chapter Thirty-Four

No, No, na, The truing out. There's OING

Bes wanted me to leave since I got here. Wanted me on the train and gone. He's fire's strong. He... up. Well, okay, that part isn't scary. But it is true.

But I love the way he touches me

He can't be one of them! One of those monsters. Those... beasts, Calil be?

Shit, 1 mangle, on the verge of trans.

He tried to get me to leave! He did. My stupid stubborn s just had to stay where I wasn't welcome.

But there are other people in this town! Some of them have to be human, right?

"Droven," he interrupts my thoughts. Please, don't cry. Don't be afraid of me. Please

51%

"Afraid of you?" I whimper, steeling myself for what was coming

Stepping slowly toward me, uses his hands as one would when approaching a frightened animal. An animal... that might bolt.

But not inval

I am a silly, weak, stupid human girl who apparently never stood a chance of getting away from my stepfather.

You said you have secrets too," I spit, teeth clenching.

"I do" he whispers, his eyes sparkling as he nears me.

I hear the backdoor open and shut and I know without looking that it's Quinn or one of his other friends. I realize right away that Domonic probably texted them to come and help hold me here in case I should try and flee. And will!!

From him?

Fixing my gaze on him, I ask "Do you still want me to leave town?"

"Draven?" Quan's voice sounds behind me, but I ignore him completely.

"To you?" I ask again..

Domonic freezes in his steps, his head falling toward his sides. His gaze lowers

"Because I will," I say

smoothly, trying to reason a way out of this. Out of him telling me something that I'm not quite ready to hear. I'll go right now if you'll let

My body goes rigid and his eyes shoot past my shoulder, to Quinn. "Give us a minute, Domonic says and I hear Quinn trudging up the stairs.

When Domonic looks at me, his gray eyes are so filled with sorrow that I have to stop myself from marching for him

He speaks in a voice desperate with lunging. You can't leave yet. Not until it's safe

I laugh, Safe. Ha! Is anywhere safe? I screech

Then, before I can blink, he grabs me into his arms and my muscles go stiff, rejecting his touch as best I can. Despite how wonderful it feels to be in his arms. Even

2/3

19:49 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Four

though the moment we touch electricity zips through me, creating an ache in my chest. Why are we Agliang Jom? Why?

A minute passes. Then ten. It only takes that long before the fight goes out of

me. I relax against him, lie isghs, heavily, his arms closing around my back in

"I don't understand any of this," I complain, raising my arms up to place my hands against his chest.

"I know," he whispers into my hair,

Then make me understand!" I mumble, my lips against his shirt wetting his chest. The hot whiskey inside of my stomach churns with heady intent. I stroke my hands upward and lift my head to meet his eyes. Sparkling silver inishes that sometimes swirl with a stretch of yellies and black.

The eyes of a wolf.

"Draven," he whispers, his head dipping down, his gate on my lips. 'I would never har you'

I wince, clutching the fabric of his shirt and kissing his jawline. Even as my lips travel toward his neck and his chest rumbles with ple

I think of home he never answered my question about whether or not he still wanted me to leave town and I say, "Yes you will Chapter Comments

Cheryl Melton

I'm truly enjoying your writing! Tysm

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,108 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1. No Mates Chapter Thirty-Five

DOMONIC 96.51%

I stiffen at her words. The Tes you wil burrowing in my chest and digging a grave there. Gathering all of my inner strength, I loosen my hold on her to take a step back. Her eyes are wide, open emerald pools that sparkle with unshed tear. I open my mouth to confess what I am to her and then close it. The vulnerability in her pase being too full of emotion for me to chance telling her right now,

I don't want her to be scared of me,

The image of that lustful fire of her eyes when she looks me, being bonked with fer has me wanting to move a bit slower.

I think she knows what I am. I'm pretty sure she's fed it out, but just in case she lost. I'm going to keep my secrets for now.

How comfortable are you with working tonight, knowing your stepfather is all but an hour away?" I ask Knowing the news of his arrival keeps her away from the bar and maybe even safely tucked in my arm for the night, because if she decides not to go in- then I will say someone to Blackjack Creek in my place. But if she chooses to go in -I will be head into the mountains with Rainier and Koda inste

She swallows, stepping away from me with contemplative eyes that have enough calculation in them to worry me. "You said you have eyes they're watching him?" She mumbles, stepping toward the shade switch on the wall and flipping it to stare out at the dense fog of the afternoon

"They are, I say, not mentioning my plant.

"Do you think panther shifters have supernatural eye-sight?"

Thave to chuckle at that. "You mean like see through the fog better than a human see through the log better than a panther? Because I promise there's nothing supernatural about it. It simply is what it is. What a panther can do - he can do. But cols in that form. With her back to me, I am forced to watch the narrowing of her eyes in the reflection of the windows. "And what can you do?? She asks, and I grit ny teeth.

With a sigh, I shake my head, not ready for her to spin on me and call me a monster can protect you, is what

"But that's all, isn't it. You won't go any farther than that," she says. "That's all your willing to offer me

I wince, not entirely sure what she's referring to. "Draven-

Em going in to work," she says, cutting me off. "I need the money"

do

I shake my head, thinking to myself about how I going to end those fuckers at the book tonight. And about how in the days to follow, Draven will be free to leave. She doesn't know it yet, but she doesn't need the money, because I will pay for any and everything she needs for as long as she lives. Even if I don't get to be in her

I step toward her slowly, placing my hands on the glass of the window and caging her in. She's my eyes in the reflection. "law afraid of you" she whispers.

My jaw clenches, "Don't be," is all!

I try and close my arm around her, will sheet?

Still staring at me in the glass, she says, "I am though." I grimace, my arms falling to my sides. She ens around and places her dainty hands on my chest. Then, raising up on her tip-toes, she kisses my jawline. "But not for the reasons you think."

My entire body shudders, and I pull her toward me by her hips. 'Stry with me tonight I practically beg her, dipping my mouth toward her earlobe, where I swirl and nibble and punish myself with her gasps of pleasure.

Then of course, my phone rings

my back pocket

"Damn it," I ron, releasing her and stepping away

Gryffin, Speak of the devil, say, watching Draven carefully as she pretends not to eave a hustle at my side.

1/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Five.

51%

"The human. Hex on the nose, Hlavčane time of on till on the cabin, but the gory a heading pour direction in one of those Mark sedans. What do you want us to

mile to myself. "Tat him come. Raider will be ready for him on the highway into tigen."

Hanging 19, Leye Draven, she's looking a little ton peaked for my liking. What is it

She sucks in a harsh breath. "Tid I hear you say human?"

I nod, "Yes, Your stepfather brought a friend"

Her eyes widen. His doctor. He mud hoe lenght his dieton"

My mind this back to what she told me earlier. About the doctor who tried to change her mother into a shifter. "The doctor that apparently cha Have you see him before?" I questions.

To my surprise, her

sparkling with taje. That1

t in replaced with something way more feral. Tiny Esta clenched, then fairly seething with anger. "No," she snaps. Her greet

No," she snaps. Her green guld give anything for some time alone with that bastard"

She wants to hurt Ion. I realize right then, that yes, Doven is scared of her stepfather, but not because she's some bellen dame. On the contrary. Her fear is consistent with the majority of her species in being naturally afraid of the predator that is a jungle cat. And before that? She thought she was protecting her

(her dieto.. killed far meither. Trying to change her. Making her sick,

There may be one thing that keeps her here with me tonight and before I can stop self I'm rolling with the idea.

Tani a selfish Jack (there ever sat ate,

A sek and Trish fuk

Without breaking eye contact with Draven, I dial Rainier. He answers on the first ring

"Number three is heading into town," I inform him,

"I know, Gryllin texted right after he called you?"

I chuckle. Maybe that old pussy is a better ally than I realized. "Did he now?"

"He did," Rainier chortles and then apparently reads my mind. "You want me to bring to you, don't you?"

I study Deaven. She is fully parting with barely contained Bary

I speak carefully into the phone, "Follow him into town first, he's coming this way for reason and I want to know what that is. After he's completed his business. take him to the docks. We'll meet you there."

Rainier's laugh is so loud it could probably be heard for miles. "Would you like him get wrapped?"

smile. "Absolutely: "Text me when he's ready," I command, then hang up the phone.

Lifting my eyes to Dravens, I smirk. Are you sure you want to work tonight? Or would you rather go for a little boat ride?"

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 D.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,442 words]

Chapter Thirty-Six DRAVEN

"Are wa sare you want to do this? Demonic asks me, his gray eyes scanning the dock then settling on his yacht,

The min has just barely set and alreach the sky is pitching imo blackness. still a few cars in t

Rainer is standing with Koda, both of them leaning at the back of a dark gray Sy with the word Sherill written across it in light silver lettering. I can't see amwone be from where I'm string inside the hammer and the windows of the SUV a pitch black. The dock isn't quite empty yet. There parking lot. A couple is bounding a houseboot and a few vessels are just coming in

"Where is he?" I hiss, straining my eyes to try and make out any shape that might be in the backseat of of the vehicle. I thought you said they had him in rastody

Draven" Demonic snaps, taking one of my hands in his and reeling my attention back in a nowching me

Gating down of his hand on mine I realize, he hasn't touched me since I told him I wanted to mess work and cume along. Almost as if he was afraid to. I glare at Nisu said they had him. You said he would be here

Heigh, letting go of my hand as I yark it toward my lap. "Maybe this was a mistake,

I scoff. "Oh no you don1. You asked me if I wanted to come! You can't change your reind. It's way too late for that."

My body

h an emotion I cant rightly recognize. It's almoood half anxiety ball rage. But one thing is for sure, the doctor killed my mother, the doctor, no less. Whatever he was giving her to

try and change her, he knew it was killing her. But did he stop? No. No he didn't. And I have the chance to look that

in his eyes, I am going to and no one is going to stop k

"He's on the yacht," Domonic relents, his hand going out to grab my arm as I reach the buckle of my seatbelt

fuck are you doing?" I snap, pouring all the hate I have into the look I give him. "Let me go"

"Not until you listen to me," he says. "I'm going to let you ask him whatever you want to him, whatever you need to say.

ning to want you up on deck."

but when

In question him. He trails off

shake my head vigorously. "No, I don't think so. There's nothing that he would tell you that I don't deserve to know, I want to be there. Please! 1

"Draven," he snaps, reaching up to cup my face in his hands. His muscles are tight, his pupils dilating. "You need to understand something. If he says anything to hurt you, or scares you in any way. I may not be able to control myself. If he makes me angry and I lose my temper

Then maybe you should wait up on deck

"Not a chance in hell" he seethes. "If things don't go the way you want them to and he upsets you - it will upset me."

"Good," I snap

He shakes his head. "No, not good. Because if I lose my temper, then you might see some things that you won't like. I might even"

become a monster," I nod. "Yeah. I figured. I'm actually sort of counting on it

Domonic works backward, his hands dapping from my face. "What? I'm not a monster

I now my eyes at him. "You're not?"

His entire body tightens, his hands going up to squeeze the steering wheel. To nil

1/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 DO

Chapter Thirty-Six

sigh, my gas softening. I know judie not evil"

He glances at me, his knuckles loosening from the steering wheel. "You do?"

There's a whole lot I don't know, but I do see that." I nod, then will my eyes, shorting
hand shing, & wonder."

He's damn near choking on his spit now as I study him. Pissed off once again. 'I'm not a
monster Fuck"

"You're not a monster. Okay, okay. I'm sorry. You're a very sexy man beast that is
muntin L... - dog? He glares at me, shaking his head. Nora dog then. He closes his eyes
and I unlock in seatbelt to lean his way, my hand stroking over the tense muscles of his
thigh test on his package. He hesitates at my I feel income to life beneath my hand. "I'm not
as stupid as I look, I put the puzzle pieces together all by myself." I nod, biting my lip.
"Am I engaged

His eyes open slowly, his gaze locking on my hand in his lap. "You're trying to kill me

I chuckle. "You told me you didn't want me to be afraid of you. Do I have a reason to
be? Are you going to bite me, Domone?" I brush the last part

of his arlobe and his entire body visibly shudders.

"Absolutely," he hisses turning his face to swallow my lips.

The kiss is deep and possessive, his tongue doing battle with my own as his hands touch
my hair to pull my body toward his. My palms slide over his exposed chest muscles, then my
nails scratch the back of his neck as he growls. He takes one of my hands away from his
neck to guide back down toward his lap. He presses his raging beard against my fingers.

"This is your beast," he hisses and I grin against his mouth.

We break apart, panting. Rainier is tapping on the window, a huge smile stretching across
his lips.

"Fuck," Domonic hisses, adjusting his pants. Rolling down the window, he groans, "We
coming"

Rainier laughs as he walks away, he and Boda climbing onto the yacht.

"Ase thury shifters too?" I have to ask. I figure thing are, but I want to be sum.

"be" he says. "These are Derbe in my pack. And you've met them all.

"hat?" I push out, with sudden clarity. My sweet has Bert is a fucking wenu?

Π

Demonic Laugh "Yes,"

51%8

"Fucking crazy," I say, shaking my head.

"There's more I have to tell you, but it can wait until after this," he says. Her you ready?

I nod, eyeing his pants and the gigantic bulge that seem to puhe beneath his clothes going to eat that thing later. "Are you?" I agjakde.

He clenches his jaw, getting out of the hummer and coming around to my side. I step out and he clasps my hand in his, quiding me toward the yacht. Once we're boded, I wait next to Koda and Rainier while he starts the engines and we set out into the dark of the sea. It's fogey in hell out here and nearly impossible to see the lights of the city as we drift away from the share. Rainier sides up to me, grinning bom ear to ear. "You and I haven't had much time to talk," be begita.

I squint at him. He's handsome, I guess. A little too regular looking for me, but definitely cute. Paler than the rest of Demonic's pack mates - or whatever they re

1. ed. But his eyes ane dark, nearly pitch black, and so is his hair.

I wonder what color of traf te la?

"Downed it I reply Time to talk **

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13.

Chapter Thirty-Six

He chackles and I can see Koda umilde diem

"We might," he says. "One da

Tainies shackles, Tai rough that his screams won't be heard is a single mod

I rest, straining in nerves, food

and this morning

a sheep berath. We must be for ennah ist

Drum Demonic calls out him the mequar

Jute death.

imonić. At first, I can't see anyone. Then along the fat wall I spy the shape of a

may nao young to be a doctor.

The sun looks up and meets my gaze. His eyes widen in fear as he begins to ers.

alteen 1 Jeel right about this.

Domonit nadi, stepping forward to remove the tape and tip out the rag that was stilled in the man mouth

har ja tairby panping

I know who you are," he says, jerking away from Dominic who in

so in glaring at him from two feet any

"Of course you do," I spit. You killed my mother"

hhead, his brown eyes wild. "No! No! Not me! 1-I'm not

you re not him? Not who?" I hiss, playing dumb for the moment

The man begins to chuckle and fat their time, notice his clothing. There aer tips along beats and tear in his shirt. They

"You know who you wanted me to be, he laughs, spitting be a maniac as he meet

Suddenly

vyes. "They know who you wanted me to be. You played tight

by there is a scuffing of footsteps nainier enter the mess hall and the engines or hack to like.

"Domonat!" Rainier's eyes are dark and he's holding his phone to his chest. Gryffyn has been taken. Chapter Comments

.11

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Thirty-Seven

DOMONIC

My body goes cold. "What? What do you mean he's been taken?"

Rainier shrugs then tosses me the phone. I raise it toward my ear as I stand in front of Draven and face the giggling idiot tied to the chair. I speak into the phone,

"They've got Gryffyn locked up in the cabins, Coose says. "We need you, baby, to come and get him out."

"Wait a minute," I hiss, my mind going momentarily blank, "How the fuck did he get himself sashed up?"

"I don't know. Taradora and Gayle were on the other side of the creek. When Gryffyn didn't answer his phone they got the phone next to his bike up on the hill. Her gone, Goose purses. The guy you've got, has he told you?" worried and sent a so

I lock eyes with the man, the boy, in the chair and I hiss, "Nothing yet. We're heading back in what I can get put out of him and get back to you."

Well you better hurry, because we're gonna tear that fucking place down."

I hang up then toss the phone back to Kaiser and nod toward Draven "Get her out here."

I need some answers

"No!" Draven snaps, her beautiful green eyes flashing dark. "I'm not going anywhere"

The man in the chair starts to cry "Please Don't leave me with

me with him! Do you know what they are

doing?" He looks toward Rainier. "What he's doing"

I quickly stuff the cloth back into the maron's mouth,

"What are you doing?" Diven as reaching for the dupe on the chair

Isnatch her holone theek*

she

can reach him and she glares us at me with fire in her bright green eyes. "I need some new

I need you to go up on deck while i get

The shakes her head, her silly black hair shaking out on my forearms. No. Les me to him. You two wearing him." I start to hand her to Rainier, but she

Want me to treat you? Then you have to that me."

I nod toward Rainier and he leaves us, but he's obviously not happy about it. "Okay. ↑ Levy, lifting a finger to trace he mouth. "You talk to him but not leaving you down here alone." Draven kisses my finger as it smoothes across her lips and dame If my dick doesn't the yout timing when it comes to her. In

as alone yet again.

"Take him gug out," she says.

With a sigh, I turn around and glare down at the Etle guy. I lean in close and whisper in his ear as me the rag "If you so much partake her from 11 rip you throat out right here. You got me?" He nods god uemove the mag

"Thank you," he says to Deaven, ning ne

"What's you name?" she a

"Michel," he gasps out, 'I-I live

Miam I'm paly nineteen. I'm a student, majoring life sciences at the University."

Drink eyes fare and to do mine. "What the fuck? 1 hind.

Drayrus pulls a chair away from the opposite wall and takes prat in front of him. Okay Michael Have you et Marcs and the doctor!

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 00

Chapter Thirty-Seven

Michael nods, his eyes filling with tears. "Yes"

Draven shivers and I move to stand behind her where I can massage her shoulders

Tell me about him," Draven says. Tell me about the doctor"

Michael begins to tremble, and for the first time I notice he looks pretty ill. He attempts to smile, "He promised to keep me like Leo and take on the faraway look of a lovesick puppy. "Leo and I started dating back at school. We were sneaking and a lot. For about his family, Leo said his father would have approved of me."

Draven's fists clench in her lap. "Marcus is a sadistic fuck," she says. "Did you know that time that Leo was what he

Michael shakes his head. "No. But I was tired of sneaking around, so when I insisted by introduce me to his family he showed me.

"And you loved him anyway," Draven says softly,

The tone of her voice when she says it is signed so full of sadness. It makes me here. 04.51%

Michael's eyes fill with tears. When asked to meet

Michael nods, "I told Leo I didn't care what he was. I even asked him to change me. Michael sighs. That's when he introduced me to Doc Vas, Doc promised he could change me into one of them and I knew that if he did, then maybe Leo's dad would accept me" My eyes narrow. I speak down at Draven, "But I thought that your stepbrother

"No!" Draven hisses. "He has hurt me, I mean, he's done things to me. But I always like he was being forced to. Like Marcus made him do it but feeling something was off with him. But I thought it was just because he hated me and my mom?"

the

Michael

Draven fills with rage. "Marcus forces him to do so many things, Michael begins to tremble. All I wanted to do when I agreed to come with them on this trip was win Marcus over. So that maybe he would leave me alone."

"Tell me about the trap." I interject. Time is running out. We're nearly to the docks by now and when we get there I need to know what my boys are getting into when we head to the mountain.

Michael sighs heavily. "De Vas ran out of the protein."

"Pro" quip

Michael nods toward me. "He only has enough left to change her," his chin juts out though he promised to change me. He's already given me three doses! I only need one more! I should have it-

"You can have it!" Draven snaps. "I don't want to be one of them. I refuse to be one of those munsters!"

I know this shouldn't hurt me, but.. it does. And I can't exactly explain why. Maybe it was the utter disgust behind her words when she spewed the word menster. Maybe it was the fact that she still hasn't gutely accepted me in my abemative for yet. Whatever the reason is, my chest feels like it's in a vise.

"Get on deck," I say in a cold dead wice

"What?" She hisses,

I look down at her, my chest heaving with pain. "You heard me. I need information from him and you're not getting ArGet up on deck. Now."

She deflates, her body paing limp against the back of the chair. "No! You said "low" I am and the jumps

"Fise," she whimpers, scrambling up from the chair and heading toward the exit.

"Ho plow?" Michael starts but I grab his throat and sipere, effectively silencing hi

Go this, watching Deaven's back as she disappears throught the doces

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Seven

9451%0

I look down at Michael, who is spluttering and gurgling as I teach for the chair and push it up close to his face. Letting go of his throat, I allow him a few gulps of air to know. Everything

"Now," I smirk, showing my fangs and watch his eyes go wide with terror. This in honor is going to go. You're going to tell me everything I want to

you don't know the answer to something. Task you? You lose a finger. Understood!"

"What? Michael says.

A growl rumbles in my chest and I know my eyes are beginning to change. I don't have time to repeat myself-

Henoch. "O-okay."

"Two shifters and a human went into the mountains says. We assumed one of them was the Doctor. We thought you were hurt. Is he hurt

Michael nods, "Yes but

To what

But he's not human."

Michael shakes his head again. "N-No!"

My eye brows. "So then the shifters that brought you here are

DV and Lester Marcus"

Now I'm scared. "Where's Leo?"

Michael trembles, probably thinking he's about to lose a finger because of his as I don't know! Please don't hurt me! We left him in Miami! He was supposed to meet me in tomorrow night. After he grabbed the girl." The girl My girl

"Yes," Michael whispers. But she's not yours. Mors says she belongs to him - don't

laugh cruelly. "Well Marcus fucking lied to you asshole. Because she's not his mate. She's my mate. He's a rapist, and a dead man. And so the fuck is his son if he so much whispers her name. Is that completely understood?" "Please don't hurt Leo." Michael is crying now, falling on his hands.

I roll my eyes and bring my face close to his so he can get a good long look at my fangs. Should I decide to change right here, I won't be able to control what I do to you.

And I know you saw my brother change when he pulled you over, I know he chased you into the woods. He's bigger than your average wolf, wouldn't you

He nods, panicking.

"I'm even bigger," I say with a smile, "So stop the fucken crying and tell me everything you know."

Chapter Comments

KKN

this is good

[VIEW ALL 2 COMMENTS >](#)

15

[< SHARE](#)

POST COMMENT

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[2,534 words]

hapter Thirty-Eight DOMONIC

1.51%

The moment the yacht pull into the duck, Trn walking up on deck. I see Drawn with her back to me, gazing out at the ocean. I'm actually pretty surprised she didn't want to catch me in

m come changing back into the mess hall after kicked her out, fut then maybe she

I catch Koda's eye and be mods, knowing exactly what he's supposed to do the moment I step off the bort.

Within the breath of a second, a standing behind her. Myers go toward the song her in on both sides. Her body temes and the attempts to our away

"Youre angry," I whisper, dipping my lips into her hair to speak directly behind her

Please don't touch me," she spit

I don't listen, wrapping my arms around her and holding her tightly can.

Just like earlier, her words sting. Like the bite of a blade into my throat, suddenly finding it hard to speak.

Arx better this way, right? This will make it mer for other go

Put for some troon, I can't swallow that logic and I prins my mouth into her neck

Im sorry I yelled in your 1 adarit. But I need you to understand that Gryffin is the one in danger right now, not you. And as much as I want to help you get answers

da your questions - I have to get to Gryffin. He never should have been part of this. The mine in keep safe. Not his. He was doing me a lave

Yours?" She whispers, her body going limp in my am. "What are you saying?"

Maybe I shouldn't have phased it that way, but I did. The truth is, even after she leaves, the will still be my napomibility. Even if she doesn't know it.

I growl, hugging her briefly in her hands come up around my neck and she tants toe me

Her eyes are most and haunting. The longer stare into them, the further I fall into some pretend future that I can abs have. But the rules were set for a reason and that won't be happening I won't be hate her for too much longer past tonight. So I dip my head in and slam my lips against hers for another taste of the fire the buns me with.

She moans into my lips, ber nails dragging down the back of my neck and her breasts pressing into my chest. The groan that rumbles out of me is inhuman in every sense of the word Animalistic in its intensity, furious, and completely ferall 1 halfway expect her to push me away, but she doesn't. Instead, she pushes upward on her toes and deeper into my mouth, one free hand gliding down over my dick.

"Fack," I hiss. "You just can't help yourvell, can you?"

""The," the mortis Th

Damn if that wasn't the one thing she could say. A surge of lust more powerful than my I have ever experienced roasts-through my, trying through my and nailing me to the spot.

Soothe right time for this shit.

"Shit, I hiss against her in "You need to have a little merry on me."

She chuckles, "Do you really want me to?"

Bloxxkrim

I can hear Roda splitting the fuel Ene and stomping back up on deck. In the back of my mind, I know she's gonna hate me for what's about to happen, but after hearing what she just said: Im thinking there's a good chance she'll forgive me for it. "Can you do ine a laver, habyr i mumble between lines.

1/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Eight

Ox 51%

She shiver against me, biting my bietom lip. Inden for when she does that, "What hat?"

Her eyes are heavy, falling over my face then my body shamelessly For a moment, I want to say fuck everything else. Fick all the rules and all the plans. Just take this gut and divepeat. But then I hear Rainier's heavy booted fert land on the dick whind me and my gears shit, I can't abandon them.

Itum Draven and slowly, walking her back to the conationway to give mytall a headstart.

Posting her in the direction of the engine room I say softly, "Belur sutil I can get back to you."

The engine stats and with a work and a

leles from the side of the yacht. For a moment Draven looks confused, but as the craft beat away from the the

she races for the bow, only to be yanked back by Enda and stowed below, where she will be safe.

She's gonna

you up later on, Rainer laughs on my left

Cant wait," say simply "She'll be safer on the island until I can get back to her."

"What did you learn Rainier asks as we watch the fog swallow the lights of my yache. With each meter Draven is carried away from me my chest high with pain.

That we need to take the doctor alive," I sigh. "And we need to do it quickly. We're going to need tranquilizers."

Banier's eyes shoot toward mine as we head toward his SUV. "I have some in the trunk."

"Have Logan grab another case of them and meet us at Gryff's place. Goose is waiting for us the

"You think that's how they got him? Gryff Rainiers as we're buckling in.

"Probably Inod, "According to their little pet, Michael. They're planning to drain him and if we don't hurry, he'll probably die."

Rainier whips away from the docks and side-eyes me, "What the fuck?"

That-of-bitch has been playing God. Experimenting on humans. Trying to change them by using Draven's stepfather as a host. I don't know jack shit about

-softer we get Gryff out, we need to find someone who do Someone we can mast My face as grim as I text the rest of my brothers to take their pesifica around the cabin at Blackjack Creek. That psycho doctor might be cutting Gryffin up-right this very minute." "Well fuck that." Raimi hisses, screeching onto the highway. There are three guns in the back. Ones a dart, I say fuck the science lets just blow those bastards to

Implan come

"Can't do that until I find out how many other shifters this doctor has been taking apart." I growl thinking of what Michael shared with me on the yacht, "Why does that matter so long as we kill him?" Rainier maps.

"Because I do not know one stupid doctor in all of existence. Do you?" this. Tra Suse. Stupid? No. If the docs as smart as I think he is - then he hasn't been working alone. No way. More than likely, there's another one like him out there. One he probably hasn't told anyone else about." My muscles tense as we near the villa at the base of the hill. I can see Goose outside, pacing back and forth while in the phone. "We kill Marcus and we take the doctor alive."

"Tell me you're not keeping him alive just so your mate can have her answers," Bain glides to a stop in the long circular driveway of the villa.

Ignore his statement. Especially the part about my mate. "Who's our best sharpshooter, besides Roda?" I ask, my mind going through each of our brothers, trying to

"Timmons "Rainier says without batting an eyelash

I text Timmons, instructing him to stop by the station on his way over and grab another couple of trang kits before meeting in here at Gryffin's

step out of the car and head toward Goon, who looks like he's been ripping his hair but

Took you long enough," he says

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 O

Chapter Thirty-Eight

Chapter Thirty-Eight

DOMONIC

1.51%

The moment the yacht pulls into the dock, Trn walking up on deck. I see Drawn with her back to me, gazing out at the ocean. I'm actually pretty surprised she didn't want to catch me in

my room coming back into the mess hall after kicking her out, but then maybe she

I catch Koda's eye and he nods, knowing exactly what he's supposed to do the moment I step off the boat.

Within the breath of a second, a hand stands behind her. Myers goes toward the song her in on both sides. Her body tenses and she attempts to run away

"You're angry," I whisper, dipping my lips into her hair to speak directly behind her

Please don't touch me," she spits

I don't listen, wrapping my arms around her and holding her tightly close.

Just like earlier, her words sting. Like the bite of a blade into my throat, suddenly finding it hard to speak.

Arx better this way, right? This will make it easier for other go

But for some reason, I can't swallow that logic and I press my mouth into her neck

I'm sorry I yelled in your ear. But I need you to understand that Gryffin is the one in danger right now, not you. And as much as I want to help you get answers

da your questions - I have to get to Gryffin. He never should have been part of this. The mine in keep safe. Not his. He was doing me a lave

Yours?" She whispers, her body going limp in my am. "What are you saying?"

Maybe I shouldn't have phased it that way, but I did. The truth is, even after she leaves, the will still be my napomibility. Even if she doesn't know it.

I growl, hugging her briefly in her hands come up around my neck and she tants toe me

Her eyes are most and haunting. The longer stare into them, the further I fall into some pretend future that I can abs have. But the rules were set for a reason and that won't be happening I won't be hate her for too much longer past tonight. So I dip my head in and slam my lips against hers for another taste of the fire the buns me with.

She moans into my lips, ber nails dragging down the back of my neck and her breasts pressing into my chest. The groan that rumbles out of me is inhuman in every sense of the word Animalistic in its intensity, furious, and completely ferall 1 halfway expect her to push me away, but she doesn't. Instead, she pushes upward on her toes and deeper into my mouth, one free hand gliding down over my dick.

"Fack," I hiss. "You just can't help yourvell, can you?"

"The," the morts Th

Damn if that wasn't the one thing she could say. A surge of lust more powerful than my I have ever experienced roasts-through my, trying through my and nailing me to the spot.

Soothe right time for this shit.

"Shit, I hiss against her in "You need to have a little merry on me."

She chuckles, "Do you really want me to?"

Bloxxkrim

I can hear Roda splitting the fuel Ene and stomping back up on deck. In the back of my mind, I know she's gonna hate me for what's about to happen, but after hearing what she just said: Im thinking there's a good chance she'll forgive me for it.

"Can you do ine a laver, habyr i mumble between lines.

1/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Eight

Ox 51%

She shiver against me, biting my bottom lip. I deny for when she does that, "What hat?"

Her eyes are heavy, falling over my face then my body shamelessly. For a moment, I want to say fuck everything else. Fuck all the rules and all the plans. Just take this gut and divepeat. But then I hear Rainier's heavy booted feet land on the deck behind me and my gears shift, I can't abandon them.

I turn Draven and slowly, walking her back to the connectionway to give mytall a headstart.

Posting her in the direction of the engine room I say softly, "Belur until I can get back to you."

The engine starts and with a work and a

leaves from the side of the yacht. For a moment Draven looks confused, but as the craft beats away from the

she races for the bow, only to be yanked back by Enda and stowed below, where she will be safe.

She's gonna

you up later on, Rainier laughs on my left

Can't wait," say simply "She'll be safer on the island until I can get back to her."

"What did you learn Rainier asks as we watch the fog swallow the lights of my yacht. With each meter Draven is carried away from me my chest high with pain.

"That we need to take the doctor alive," I sigh. "And we need to do it quickly. We're going to need tranquilizers."

Banier's eyes shoot toward mine as we head toward his SUV. "I have some in the trunk."

"Have Logan grab another case of them and meet us at Gryff's place. Goose is waiting for us the

"You think that's how they got him? Gryff Rainier asks as we're buckling in.

"Probably Inod, "According to their little pet, Michael. They're planning to drain him and if we don't hurry, he'll probably die."

Rainier whips away from the docks and side-eyes me, "What the fuck?"

That-of-bitch has been playing God. Experimenting on humans. Trying to change them by using Draven's stepfather as a host. I don't know jack shit about

-softer we get Gryff out, we need to find someone who do Someone we can mast My face as grim as I text the rest of my brothers to take their pesifica around the cabin at Blackjack Creek. That psycho doctor might be cutting Gryffin up-right this very minute." "Well fuck that." Raimi hisses, screeching onto the highway. There are three guns in the back. Ones a dart, I say fuck the science lets just blow those bastards to

Implan come

"Can't do that until I find out how many other shifters this doctor has been taking apart." I growl thinking of what Michael shared with me on the yacht,

"Why does that matter so long as we kill him?" Rainier maps.

"Because I do not know one stupid doctor in all of existence. Do you?" this. Tra Suse. Stupid? No. If the docs as smart as I think he is - then he hasn't been working alone. No way. More than likely, there's another one like him out there. One be probably hasn't told anyone else about." My muscles tense as we near the villa at the base of the hill. I can see Goose outside, pacing back and forth while in the phone. "We kill Marcus and we take the doctor alive."

"Tell me you're not keeping him alive just so your mate can have her answers," Bain glides to a stop in the long clecular dairway of the villa.

Ignore his statement. Especially the part about my mate. "Who's our best sharpshooter, besides Roda?" I ask, my mind going through each of our brothers, trying to

"Timmons "Rainier says without batting an eyelash

I text Timmons, instructing him to stop by the station on his way over and grab another couple of trang kits before meeting in here at Gryffin's

step out of the car and had toward Goon, who looks like he's been ripping his hair but

Took you long enough," he ang

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 O

Chapter Thirty-Eight

"We have a few new problems," Light Theatershing and arran

Goose tenses, "Another panther

I hod. They know what you are." I smile. "They don't know what we are. So when mens get here This is what wenging to do

Chapter Comments

Goose tenses, "Another panther

I hod. They know what you are." I smile. "They don't know what we are. So when mens get here This is what wenging to do Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Thirty-Nine

DRAVEN

I 516.

Let me go!" I his. "I don't want to leave him!"

Koda's arms close around me, sealing my back against his chest. I can feel the steady rum of his heartbeat as he maneuvers me down the compuniunway. The mun is much too calm for my liking Howie Domonic do this!

"If you don't let me go, lil bite you!" I screech, attempting to lower my teeth to his forearms

Koda laughs heartily, tossing me up over his shoulder like a sac of potatoes. Hauling the down the steps and into the state room, he tosses me onto the bed

"What the fuck is wrong with you?" I snap, jumping up to show him in the chest, "Win is steering this dain thing?"

11s on autohelm. She's steering hemel," he says softly, his dark blue eyes twinkling with assement.

Autohelm? So we're

We're not just heading out

"Where are we going?" I ask, taking a deep breath to calm my nerves.

gns, Red Wolf Island."

he hell is that?

I cant my head, "Where the hell is that?"

He shrugs then spins around heading for the door. "You'll be saly there

"What do you mean?" I startle, nunining past him to block the door. "Are you loving na on an island?"

shake his head. "No"

Hugging my arts to my chest, I shiver. "So the Domanie-

"Will join in tomorrow," he soothes, his face softening. "Michael is still in the mess the informs me, shoving past me with a twinkle in his eye. "Maybe you can use him as a punching bag." Michal?

"You mean Domele didn't kill him I shout,

All 1 hear is Roda chuckling as I make my way back into the main hall to stare at the swinging kitchen door. Taking another deep breath, I push into the space Michael sits the same as he did before. Trembling and shivering with fear. Although he's no longer gapped, snotty tears have drenched the front of his shit. That seems to be the extent of the damage though, which is rather surprising. He hiccups when he sees me "Where is he?" He cries

"Gone, I snap, taking a seat in front of him, much like I did before. "What did you to him

Michael takes des shuddering breath, his eyes filling with fresh tears. "Do you think he's going to kleo?"

"No. Why would he do that? I plaster on a fake smile. Its Marcas he's going to kill. Leo is as in as you say he is - then me hell be dne," lie. I bighly doubt Demonic will be considering anything deeper than a stab wound should he happen upan Leo. He wont give a damn about feelings coercion. Spending extra time giving a fuck about why someone chose to do the horrible things they did doesn't seem like something that's high on Domonics prory list.

1/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Thirty-Nine 151617

Michael laughs darkly, as if he know better than to believe my lib. "Unfortunately isn't as innocent as he claims to be," Michael says chillingly, his ry taking on a strange feral glow, "None of us are," he chuckles and then shakes himself as if surprised by his cun tone. "I-I'm sorry. I don't know why I said that."

What the fuck?

My eyes namos on him, taking note of the strange sharpness that seems to have end his once dull brown eyes.

I scoot my chair back a bit as Michel's for begins to take on a strangely different am Muscles contorting, knitting, coiling, his smile widening. The rope binding him to the chair goes taut about his waist and he grows out in pain.

"What are you doing?" 1 clamor up from the chair and back against the far wall, "w the hell?"

"It hurts" Michael growls out in a voler three octaves deeper than before. Help me! Untie me please!"

Fuck that!

Koda 1 shout.

No! Don't call him" Michael seethes, his tongue darting back and forth like a band bust untie me

String by string the rope seems to be coming apart around him. The chair groaning against his weight. His eyes are slanting upward and inward. His face elongating

Is he hacken changing!

"Ch nur God," 1 hiss, stumbling back and away from him. "Whats wrong with you?"

My eyes go toward his feet and hands, which I'm happy to we are still completely normal. The few times I saw Marcus change, I noticed his hands always went first, Whatever is happening to Michael is different somehow. He is panting with the effort his body is making to expand while tied down. His face is stuck in an almost half shot. No fur nor teeth. Just a mutated human head.

The dose to the mess hall swings open and Roda is standing there wearing only hiss and a half smile,

"Get out." Boda commandh me in a guttural voice that is nearly all animal.

W wait! I don't think he's doing it on purpose!" I plea, scrambling up onto my feet. neech help! Maybe"

Shut up bitch Michael gods is my direction as his nose pulls upward in a snart. am going to kill you when I get free! I will tear you apart limb by limb and that will be the end of this madness."

"What the hell is happening to him? It wam, grabbing for Koda's bare shoulder. "Half beast. He can't change. Just knock him out."

But Roda ignores me, his eyes are glued to Michael and when I shift my gaze back to the chair I see that Michael is almost free.

He is hissing like a feral beast, but without the fangs to complete the look, the sight something is trying to jump out of his skin. His chair is bouncing up and down, its

"What the hell?" hiss

more than a little creepy. His muscles are bulging and quiring. Almost as if

trembling with its unstable weight..

Koda's turns his face toward mine shightly, his once blue eyes now completely black out. Lock yourself in thebelmem. Do it now"

"Come with me!" I whisper.

Koda's neck straightens, his back muscles bunching and shifting as if preparing to cher. 'Co," he growls out.

"Michael's hideous laugh grabs my attention and I stumble backward toward the extore looking past Koda and yelping in fear.

"Yes!" Michael streams, at the same time the chair falls apart beneath him. He is standing now, his lips lifting in an unnaturally wide spile. The ropes are gone and so are his bears. His head tormbles and shivers, his face shifting slowly toward me. Oh shit

2/3

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Thirty-Nine

51%)

Suddenly the air in front of me sapratapulting me off my feet. The sound is so sheep and so loud that I wince with pain. My ears are ringing as I go flying. backward and out of the mess hall. I have no idea what has just happened when thi the four, the wind gushing from my lungs. Blinking my eyes, I claw for breath. The room around me slowly coming into focus as sound returns to my ears. 1 stutter there for a moment before climbing to my knees.

that that noise? The engine?

A gulging screwrenches the air accented by the unmistakable sound of a bone

clean in half.

Holy shit. My spine tingles. Few and quiet filling like a veil over my head.

"Koda?" I whimper.

Oh my Godt What just happened?

The doce is still swinging back and forth, granting me afickering view of the kitchen. The bright white ground there is darkening net Tinoleum now pooling with bright red blood.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Forty

"Koda 1 yello, en wice cracking. Reaching for the wall, I me it to pull my army feet.

If he were he would say se

ist as I am about to shy phone from poket, a pair of hare, caramel tinted lent steps to the pool of blood in the kitten, M. yes tha muscular arm draped in swirls of black ink pushes the swinging door completely open. Kodos beiving chest is coverd in blood, his Lark blue i amusement as he stands there. That signature smirk of his, firmly in place. Thank Go One arm remains behind his back, the drip of Mood podd

BK5100

"You couldn't answit me? Cat had your tongue, or what? I tipe and he chuckles. Twas worried for you, idiot,"

Koda shrugs, sauntering by me and maneuvering his hand so I can't see what it is he holds

You killed him, didn't you? I shinger and be freezes nichtride.

out onto the deck

With his back to me, he mods, then continues up the steps and out onto

Something tells me that the snap I heard before was Michael's neck. And the thing that Koda was holding behind his back-the thing that was dripping Blood - must have been Michael's head the body? No.

Do I want to peek into the kitchen and see the body? No. Not really. But for some reason I can't help myself

The moment I step into the mess hall I regret it. Michael's body does in fact lay lifeless on the floor. But his limbs appear strangely stretched. Like he must have smitten into some kind of half-state at that's not the worst part. Aside from the open neck wound which is still trickling with blood, his backrests on the heels of his feet. His entire body has been folded in half at the hips.

Holy shit these wolves are arranged

must have pushed me out into the hall and snapped Michael in half all in the 1 second. So, not his neck after all huh? Nevermind, that his head is in fact, mine

second. Michael's spine cracking that way had to have been that horrible

Just the memory of that crunching, cracking, popping, sound drives a shiver

My eyes

over the elongated hands and oddly thin wrists. The flesh of his skin tagged with gray. Noting the stretch of his nails coming up over the edges of his fingers, I realize it as if he was trying to force a clown but just couldn't quite make the final evolution. Was that his plan all along? To get me alone and then kill me?

it couldn't have been, because Domonic was sure Michael was human

the war until he got on this yacht Domonic drove a healthy dose of fear into blood

Maybe that was what did it. Michael's fear of losing Le

Could it be that emotions are that powerfully connected to a shifter's transformation? Probably

Thinking about the way my mother looked before she died - her skin nearly trasalarms. My mind tracks back to those nights that I heard her swearing in pain and I wonder was this what she was crying about back then? Was she suffering through half-shift the way Michael seemed to be? Marus said my mom was too old to hike the change, but could it be there was a different reason altogether?

Maybe some people can make the change and some people can't

My mom was healthy before Mucus came along. She was Bt and full of life prior to him tainting our lives. Staybet don't have so much to do with age, but more to do with genetics. I wonder... was Mängun him a panther shifter or did the good doctor change him into what he is the way he did Lee,

1/2

19:50 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Forty

Because if Marcus was born a shifter it would make sense that his son her to possess the gene.

of genetic inclination toward the case. And by whatever means Michael did

Taking one last look at Michael's corpse, I step away from him and back into the sitting room. Heading straight for the bar I barely notice Korda as the kitchen with a large trash bag in hand.

I wonder what he did with the head

I shiver and pour myself a tall shot of tequila. Toing it back without hesitation, I share through the fruit bowl in search of a fire, fest in case I need another shot.

"Pour one for me too," Koda's voice waves into my thoughts,

Glancing up, I see he's still not dressed, however his magnificent chest is washed of food and his hands are clean as well.

I nod and slice into the lime, then pour three more shots. Two for you and one for me," I say, doing my best to keep my eyes from moving

Knocking it back, I watch him do the same. One after the other he knocks them back, yet he leaves the lime slices untouched

Damn these men. All of them.

"Can you, maybe, put some clothes on?" I ask timidly.

Koda laughs then disappears back into the kitchen Wtching him mop up the blood

the flour like it's nothing but a gallon of spilled milk, I realize this is not the

first time something like this has happened. He and the rest of Domonic's crew are us a little too casual about death.

Michael's headless body is still in there. Probably on the ground blocking the rider. Sure, oda more than likely put it in a hug, but where it going after that? In the ocean? In the fridge? Or maybe Koda hasn't bagged him up at all. Maybe he's going to chop him into tiny pieces first. "Stop it." I hiss at myself, "You're losing it."

"No worries," Koda says with a wink. I put the body in the induftrial treener. Everything in the fridge is still good to eat."

I shake my head, clamping my

by yes shut

1. c. No don Jacking think so.

When I reopen them, Roda i bagging up the map and bucket. The shift of air sends alt of bleach in my direction.

"All good?" I say, my eyes falling toward the front of his boxers.

He catches my eye, then laughs. "Yeah I go and get dressed now. Wouldn't want you to tell Domenic about how you had to watch my shit swing back and forth while I mapped."

"Why did you?" I ask, my tongue loose from the liquet. "Why the fuck did you get nad to kill and then clean up the new?"

He chuckles. "I didn't want to ruin the only clothes I brought with my. So I took them off. Now, I can put them back on and you can stop wishing it we hit you were mated to."

"As if" I snicker my denial before my laughter dies in my throat, my brain catching on to what he just said. "Wait! Lorry" I step up to his chest and glare "What do you mean - muted to?" Chapter Comments

15 12

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,447 words]

Chapter Forty-One

DOMONIC

0451%

I watch through the window of the cabin, my eyes trained on the fully shifted lion they have lain out on the table. I can see the doctor. His greasy black mustache and beagle eyes glinting off the panel lighting up above him. Tubes are stick out of Gryff's hind leg pumping blood into a bag the doctor has draped over his back. A low growl sounds from about forty feet behind me on the bill. It's Logan seruling to me that someone has eyes on Marcus

Perfect. It's time. I let out a long howl giving the okay for the others to attack. The gal is to get the Dee Vas and Marcus out to the open and in the range of Timmons dart. These two assholes sean 1 be expecting webes, but they will be expecting hints.

Trades and Gayle tear down the front door, tempting the notice of the two panther inside the cabin. Just as expected, the good doctor. tranquiline pum while Marcos shifts into full panther form. The sight of that bastard hijacks my blood pressure up about five hundred per tear him apart piece by fucking piece and sodomize him with his very own parts for the years of abuse he inflicted on Dren

With our operation in full swing 1 leap from the boulder just behind the cabin and land with my full weight on the mel. A mile down Rain, and Quinn shit and spread out. Their job is to keep watch on the perimeter just in case lo shows up as we suspect he

Not for one minute do I believe that Marcus fully intended to change Michael into one of them. I'm sure whatever promises made to him was meant to be broken. Michael was just a play. An extra lab rat. Someone they could manipulate into an active duty deco Doc Vas shoots down two lionesses with darts. The female go down outside the cabin and Marcus does exactly as expected. He leaps out the front door and directly in Tinslee of sight.

Perfect

Ther the shot before it hits him. Unfortunately, Marcus doesn't go dren with the first hit. He says, falling forward on all fours until he spies me on top of the cabin and let out a howl of frustrated anpr.

I grow as Timmons second shot pieces the night air, lodging in the fallen panther domen.

I leap just as Doc Vas stumbles outside, a rifle in hand that he points directly at me.

kill you before you can take him, Doc Vas hisses

I snarl and the look of fear in the doctor's eyes pleases me, I know what he sees. All too large to be real. With eyes that understand every move he makes and Lings like rames that reflect the moonlight with the sweet promise of death

To not afraid of his pathetic gaa. Not with Goose standing behind him, a forty five peching the base of the doctors skull.

"Drop it," Goose commands

And just at I suspected, the good doctor smarter than the average bear, so he does

BRAVEN

curses, lowering his head. "I'm going to get dressed."

He saunters up the companionway, granting me his back and leaving me to soak in his words.

Med to mated with anyone.

helkabout-Domenic

as he saying that Domenic and are d

I stomp my foot in frustration. "We're not done talking about this!" I shout up at him before whipping out my phone to send a text.

1/4

19:50 Wed, Nov 13 DO

Chapter Forty-One

Thanks for sending me with Koda. Ho great without a shirt. He's also a ser you are. Oh and RTW Michael's dead. Tumst he was For five minutes I stare at my message, thinking I hated Domenic mough to get hird to answer me, but he doesn't.

Suddenly that thought is enough to change my anger into something much harder for my hyper independent and to accept. Fear Asense of dead fall over me at that thought

at that thought and I have the abrupt n

(pralization that Ham a jerk.

He left me here trying to keep me safe from the one man I have been running from for far too long.

What did I expect him to do?

Off

Mr

Please be okay Please. If you don't answer me soon, I'm going to stral this damn yacht and head back for you. Domanic

When the there dots appear letting me know that he is typing, I drag it a shuddering breath. Thank God

I'm tempted to let you steal the yacht just so that I can spank you for it.

Ton't be a dick. What happened? Is Marqu

Domenic-

What the hell does that mean? You've got him?

19:51 Wed, Nov 13 OD

Chapter Forty-One

Mr-

Domenic? Please. I have to know that you're okay. I have to touch you. I'll go crazy don't.

Thamanic

You shouldn't say things like that. Not this close to the full moon

9435151

What does the moon have to do with anything?

Doronic

You'll see. I have to gs. Call me when you get to the safe house.

Safe house? What fucking safe house?

The shit of the ocean and the sound of the yacht engine dying shakes me from my stupor and I glance up from my phone to find Koda priming down at me fully dressed

Come on," he says, turning around to head back up on deck,

I follow him up and the moment I step out, spotlights come to life along a small wharf to my right. The fog is thicker here, but I can still see the tops of evergr trees and all the sharp black rocks that surround the shoreline. Chappy waters slam against the cliffside of what appears to be the highest point of the und A the story structure boom in the darkness. The only house visible from the sea. The entire it can't be more than ten feet across, it is that small.

"Lemme guest," I mark, taking Koda's outstretched hand. "You pups own this too."

His laugh is answer enough as he leads onto the pier. Then dominoes, twenty lights on each side of a stone stairway go on Lighting path leading all the way in an embankment.

we take our time climbing up toward what appears to be a duplicate of Domnits place back

"How many houses are there out here? I ask my head on a swivel at se on the mainland. "And what's with you guys and your glass wal

He smiles as we get the top of the stairs and I am greeted with the most gloriously beautiful sight I have ever seen

This house was obviously built on the highest point giving any who are up her a full the hundred sixty degree view of all that surrounds it.

We had this place built five years ago. It's our parkhouse, But we've never used it. Anda says softly unlocking the front door with his palm. "It locks behind a coded entry

A panel slides open to the right of the dot to reveal a small keyboard and computer screen. Koda types in something that falls into a stream of asterisks along the

here the palm sensor next to the door begins to glow with blue light. "Place your right hand on that panel," he tells me

I nod, myping into the open hall as I do. The moment my hand touches the screen, a barely noticeable heat flashes across my palm and the words register accrpret flashes in red letters. "What the hell I crap, notching my hand back.

"Now you have access," Roda says, nodding toward the open doorway. "Go inside and make yourself at home. Domenic's mom in the biggest one on the third floor. I have to check the island for trespassers." My neck jerks up. "Dotong's room?"

Hegnerts, "Should I direct you to mine steady?"

The moment I step inside the house it thrums to life. The door swings shut and locks behind me and the entire first floor floods with soft light. The decor here is

3/4

19:51 Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Forty-One

done in black and white with white track lighting throughout the place, Modernas hell.

The wall-to-wall television in the living room flickers on and the sound of sports recast fills the air.

These guys like their Sportscenter, Jess

My phone pings in my pocket and I whip it out to find a text message from an unnumbered

What the fuck?

Can't wait to see you again.

It's been too long.

I stare at the screen for what feels like forever before I realize Roda has returned. It looked like the first thing he does in

hands.

After reading the message, he asks, "Who besides Domenic has your number?"

#4351%

out of my

I shake my head, flying toward the wall and the shade switch cognize the. When all the windows are covered, tum back to Koda, "No one does, not even Bart I shiver, "Absolutely no one ele Then I realize, the phone number isn't registered to me.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Forty-Two

DRAVEN

51% 7

"Don't answer them," Koda sana colilly, handing me the phone. Domanic will be here tomorrow, Hell handle i

er in registered to Domanic. Do you think it could be Mars? Maybe she

The phone number in

"No Koda says, "Temoni would have taken all necessary precaution. His one gallo protect you

"His one goal," I mimic. My eyes name. "Right. Because we re matel," I mom with arcastic sort.

Boda smirks "Not gonna touch that one." He steps past me and heads for the kichen. The freezer should be stocked with enough to the un Im sure Domanic will bring supplies."

"What floor is your rooms on?" I ask calmly. I'm not trying to flirt and think he know it, despite the suggestive little wink he sends my li

The third. Don't worry," he chides. "No one will get to you without going through my list

"I want worried," I say, eyeing him from head to toe. "You're obviously more than capable of snapping a spine or two."

His neck jerks then he scowds at me playfully. "I did what I had to

I cross my arms and saunter toward him in the kitchen as he sets about making a pot of coffee. About this mate tuit" He quirks an eyebrow. You know that Durandhaven like-actually slept together, right? Not in the Liblical sense, at least."

He shrugs, ignoring my sideways ply for information. Opening the fear, he pulls out a package of chicken and what looks to be a big of jasmine rice. "Wir should eat, he says, setting the chicken to defrost in the microwave above the stove. Then get some test." Tinicker. "You really don't like to that much, do you?"

Again, he smirks, moving about the kitchen like he doesn't have a care in the world

"What did you mean when you said - mated to ask, uking the rice from him as he pulls a cooker from the cupboard. "Because us regular folk from this century call it sex fucking, Not - mating.

kets loose with a full on laugh this

ugh this time then shakes his heal, thwarting aty inquiries once again.

"It's a simple question. Why won't you anwer it? I snap, losing a little of my patience as I add water and start the rice

Tuning on the electric stove, he sets a cast iron pan the front bumer. There should be a jar of Alfredo sauce in the pantry. Would you mind?"

"C" I grow at him, spinning around to retrine the sauce. Opening the pantry I shout back, "So, are you mated?" I pull down a glass jar and a can of peas thinking they go well with whatever he's planning to make. I walk back into the kitchen to see him glaring at his phone. Roda? What is it?

He shakes his head then turns his phone to show me what appears to be a surveillance video of a cave

"What am I looking at?" I ask. The video is incredibly clean. What camera this is reaming from must be set high up in a tree somewhere,

"Keep watching he mays.

The longer sterthe more it appears that something is moving inside of the cave. Heshing in and out with the blackness. It almost looks like a trick of the eye with the entrance to the have being so dark. But then the soft glow of orange fire fires to life on the screen, banking in and out as if it hasn't yet found a full kindling "Where's this?" I whisper

"The's only are cave on the entire island. And I checked it just a few minutes ago. - was empty."

I shake my head, "it's not angreper,

19.51 Wed, Nov 13 O

Chapter Forty-Two

"I can see that." He says, taking his plane back.

What are you going to do?"

751%0

His jaw clenches. "Nothing yet," he says, '11 keep an eye on it. Whomever they are, they can't get in here. It's starting to rain, so I doubt they'll be veaturing any farther than where they are now, ""How did you

not see them before? I quip. "Or smell them or stiff them - or w

1- or whatever it is you wolves do?

He lets his eyes, "Un - 11 must have been in too much of a

He sidesteps me and I squint at him suspiciously. Something about the way he behed me off doesn't seem right. I havent known Koda bang doesn't match his sudden dismissive behavior.

I continue to study

by him as he adds a little olive oil to the pan along with a few here's avoiding my eyes and my questions. Lefinitel

about that.

"Maybe the person needs help," I suggest, noting the way his body stiffen. I mean berring out there. And if they weren't there before day migittie washed up on there. They could be soaking wet or bleeding or

"Stop!" He snaps, his dark blushing. I take a closer look after eat, Satidad?"

1 bite my lip, nodding

Yuş. Definitely something a little weird about the way he reacted.

DOMONIC

They be contained," Rainier says, taking a seat behind his

Skrill Station.

I sigh, my eyes falling over my brothers that are scattered about the room. "Right. Well start interrogations tomorrow. Goose says Gryffin will want retribution. But made it clear that his comes second to mine. I want the last word and the kill" I say, my eyes narrowing. "A three man team needs to keep watch over there at all times until we find Lea. More than likely he will try and rescue his daddy"

"About Draven," Rainier starts and I raise a hand, cutting him off.

To not sending her away until all threats have been nullified."

Kain laughs, Oh I know that. I was only going to suggest maybe instead of sending her away that you

"Don't, I snap "Please don't"

Rainier only nods,

"Maybe we need to have a conversation about these rules of ours," Quinn says quietly. "I mean - maybe we ought to change a few."

I smirk, "A few? Will you listen to yourself? Look around you?" I chuckle, getting up out of my seat to address every man there. "We've been at peace for five years. One female shows up. One mate. And already-chaos."

Logan glares at me, shaking his head. "But we dealt with it. We handled it. I agree with Quinn. We should change the rules. I like Draven and the likes of us. We should-"

"Tough" I nod, pounding a hand down on the deck. "I will not risk her life. You want to change the rules? Bring me the bastard that started that fire five years ago. Then we'll talk"

"Quite unbelievable, Grant chuckles "And crazy"

"What the fuck are you talking about?" I hhs.

Grant smirks, "Do you really think you'll be able to live without that girl now that you've been with her?"

2/3

19:51 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Forty-Two

I laugh. "Takes on your friend. Because he's been with her. And I'm not going to be."

The collective shock that moves through the room is palpable. They obviously know something about self control.

-Hot Who am I kidding?

Everytime I'm near Draven, she sucks the control right out of me

And just with that thought, my phone pings with a text message from the sexy little patch.

Draven-

We made it to the house. Please tell me

tell me you'll be as your way

way soon. I'm about to go to sleep in your big king-sized bed all by my

self tomorrow, I have things to take care of here.

2451%

Draven

Really? That's how it's going to be? Okay - guess I'll get to know Koda a bit better then. After all, he and I are only a wall apart. Do you think he'll hear of pleasure myself to thoughts of you? Goddam She's really going to push my buttons tonight? Really?

A... Who did you give my number to? Because someone tested me from an unknown number. Promising to see me soon,

I stare at

are at the me

message, my blood going cold, No one should have her number. No one Rainier, I hiss. I thought you said that phone was completely unlisted." Baines eyes narrow, "Draven's phone" Yeah it k

I growl, "Apparently it's not." I show the screenshot Draven just sent me with the best from the unknown number. "Who might have access?"

No one!" Rainier snaps. "I swear. The person would have to be a hacker or work for phone company! The phone number is brand spankingly huone should have it."

"Guys Lief chuckles "You do realize it could be an actual wrong number, right?" He pyples. "Everything doesn't have to be so sinistrave they texted again

I shake my head no. "She says no. They

I wonder what she's planning to sleep in. Probably one of my shirts.

I groan, the image of her smooth tanned legs spread open while she pouches herself driving my brain into my dick.

Fack. Looks like I'm heading to the packhouse after all.

"Come on, Quinn. Let's put to the docks, I need a ride to the island."

Chapter Comments

11

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,042 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1- No Mates Chapter Forty-Three

DOMONIC 942.51%E

Quinns speed boat pulls into the wharf as a bolt of lightning blanes across the sky. The rain is perity much hammering down and the pair of us are socked to the skin. All fog has completely disappeared, lowing the island in a sparkle of diektuen with the promise of a stom. My eyes go straight up the cliff toward the bosse and the bright yellow window on the third story.

Fuck hope

last thinking that Braven might be up there in my bed is enough to heat the chill fr my bones.

"We both better stay here tonight," say a leap out onto the stairway

Te the bo

Quinn nods, "I'll be the boat up. I want to take a run through the woods."

My eyebrows go up as another flash of light flickers above us right on top of an earth shaking rumble of thunder. "Forget the run. This storm is right on top of us."

Quinn knows better than to argue, even though I see the disappointment in his eyes. The man has an unhealthy obsession with lightning. On a land this small a storm like the one that's about to hit can be downright deadly. No matter what you are - wolf or human. The moment I step onto the porch and my stomach growls in reminder that I haven't eaten since this morning. Unlocking the door I am greeted with the unmistakable sound of Dave's throaty laughter and my eyes go straight to her.

She's fresh from the shower and wearing one of my long sleeved button up shirts. The damn thing probably reaches her knees, but she's sitting on the couch with her legs folded under her, granting anyone with a dick an eyeful of soft caramel skin. Licking on her mostly bare legs, my chest rumbles with anger and I grit my teeth,

ready to map

Kidawaddare.

Even so, I'm fuck fuming

But..then she looks at me and all!

anger washes away with the lust in her eyes

green gaze brightens and she leaps over the back of the sofa to slam into my chest, her arms going around my neck. I can't help it, my body thrums with

"You came," she mumbles against the bare skin of my neck.

Her soft, plush lips drag over my throat and I can't move. "I'm wet," I say.

"I don't care," she breathes, smiling into my shirt. "I'm so glad you're okay."

For fuck of I don't feel all warm and gooey inside. Den it.

My ego and und her and spin her around, ignoring the angry looks coming from my brothers in the dep-locking their view of her with my body, I push her toward the stairs: "We need to talk," I whisper. Shouting over my shoulder at Roda, I say, "I'll be back down in a minute. I'll take a plate of that chicken you made. Taking Draven's hand, I allow her to lead me up two flights of stairs to my room. Working her ass the entire time.

Oh yeah, that boy can cook. That chicken's fine," Draven raves opening the bedroom door

Tim, bah?" I gipel, shaking off the jealousy that sizzle across my chest. I've made breakfast and diners may snow? She's never said my shit was fer.

The moment we step into the run she spins around to face me and reaches for the hem of my shirt. We need to take these things off of you," she says throatily.

1/2

19.51 Wed, Nov 13.

Chapter Forty-Three 4.51%

Her soft hands glide over my chest as she slips the shirt over my head and I stand in a trance. There are three buttons at the top of my shirt that she is wearing, that are not done up, and every time her shoulders shift; I'm given a healthy amount of her cleavage to set my mouth to water. I'm frozen, my balls tightening in my pants as she reaches for my waistband.

"Stop" I say, snatching her hands. Mine is mine. Her eyes go wide, filling with something like disappointment as she presses her away so that I can undress myself.

"Oh," she sighs, deflating "Sorry I didn't mean to upset you,

I hiss, "Don't be sorry. And you didn't upset me, I just don't think it would be fair for me to pounce on you until after I've had a shower. And if you keep touching me, my dick is going to punch out and knock your teeth back."

Her face turns crimson and her fat pink lips turn up in a smirk as she eyes my crotch "What if I open my mouth first?"

Hobby fuck. Yes, that might work

Thank God my pants are wet, I was hoping that some of the chill would slow the blood from pouring into my rock. But no, that does not. Instead, my gaze falls over her shapely legs and just the smoothness of them is enough to light a new fire in my groin. They are my hips. Deaven is her head and the silk of her hair all gently over the rise of her breasts, grazing over one stiff nipple and making thi

Halsbelieve falmart felt her her slate with Kode - for entire goddel

list that thought is damn not enough to inspire a violent shift and I have to swallow the thunder in my chest to fight it off,

Clearing my throat, I shut my eyes. I can't witness much more of her beauty without ripping the nest of her buttons loose. "Put some damn pants on please and go do a check on my food. I'll be in the shower and be down in a second"

it wrapping around her wrist.

She don't say a word, but as she walks by me her lavender pant hits me from every angle and my hand shoots out,

She sp

"Pants Erst," I remind her, before staking toward the bathroom and shutting myself side without so much as a look back.

Leaning my head against the door, I work for control.

Deep breaths? Nope, can't do that Fucking fovender.

Son-of-a-bitch. It's either but one out in the shower-at-die.

One thing is for sure. I am going to lay her down tonight and taste very catarsel inch of her sweet little body.

I want to have her heat pour onto my tongue and my name to rip from her mouth.

Chapter Comments

12

POST COMMENT NOW

2/2

19:51 Wed, Nov 13

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,816 words]

Chapter Forty-Four DRAVEN

"What's wrong?" Quinn asks when I march toward the bar and pour myself a tall glass of whiskey.

What's wrong? What's WRONG???

Domonic is what's wrong. I practically threw myself at him upstairs and he treated me like some bothersome child. I mean sure, yeah, he said all the right things. But where I come from actions speak louder than words. And his actions say he doesn't want me touching him. "Nothing," I snap, taking a long gulp of the burning amber liquid in the glass. Coming up coughing, I nearly retch all over the plush white rug beneath my feet.

"Obviously," Quinn laughs. Shaking his head, he pulls the tumbler out of my hands. "This isn't going to fix it, you know."

I scoff, "There's only one thing that will fix it - and he's not putting out

Koda giggles from the kitchen doorway and I can't help but smile. Quinn lets loose with a high pitch whistle and shakes his head at me, tumbling back on the sofa. He's already showered and dressed in dry clothes. So what the hell is taking Domonic so long? Gazing longingly at the stairs, I say, "He's been in there for forty-five unholy minutes - doing God knows what - all alone in the shower. Meanwhile, I'm down here in my chastity pants, with the

of his puppies. I groan, dropping down on the couch angrily.

"Hey!" Quinn snaps. "I'm all wolf lady. There's not a damn thing 'puppy' about me." He grins, sending a wink my way. "As you should already know. You've seen me naked," he reminds me, referring to his graceful fall in the bathroom.

I laugh, feeling the burn of the whiskey tickle my cheeks. My head swims and I lick my lips. "Oh yeah. That's right." I smirk. "I have a question for you though." He nods, swallowing down the rest of my whiskey. I can't believe I'm about to ask this. When in doubt - blame it on the liquor. "Which one is bigger? The wolf's the man's?"

"No way," Koda hisses, crumbling into fits of laughter.

2

Whiskey showers me in the face as Quinn sputters in shock. "No. No you did not."

I cock my eyebrows. "I did. I diiiidd. And... I seriously want to know."

Koda is gasping for air and Quinn's face is stoplight red. "Oh hell no," Quinn snickers. "I can't answer that." Then, as if he can't help but chime in with the hysterics, he says, "You'll just have to see for yourself on the night of the full moon."

Koda howls, chuckling so hard he's gripping the counter top to keep from falling down.

"You know he's gonna kill you, right?" Koda gasps.

Quinn nods, "Yup." His body is shaking with laughte

fucken dead."

as the three of us begin cracking up. Then between gasps of air, Quinn adds, "I'm so

For some reason,

his statement makes everything that much funnier and I drop to the floor hooting with cackles of joy. "My stomach," I complain, still laughing. "It hurts! Quick, more whiskey!"

"Jesus Christ," a cold, menacing voice fills the room "What the fuck are the three of you doing?"

I sit up on my knees and bite the inside of my cheek. Slapping Quinn's leg to get his attention, I whisper, "Quiet. The Priest is among us."

"The Priest, Quinn hiccups, still giggling. "Oh no, no, no. Please stop."

1/4

Chapter Forty-Four

But I can't, I stand up, doing my best to hide my smile. Lowering my head as I approach Domonic, I say, "My apologies Father Domonic,

cleansed?"

are you

3

A hiss of giggling slithers out of my two warbling companions, but I notice Koda has placed his back to us and Quinn's head has fallen into his lap. My cheeks are burning from trying to keep a straight face "What?" He glares at me, his eyes shooting from Quinn to Koda then back again. He sneers at me, his eyes slanting. "What the fuck are you talking about?"

I snicker, biting my lip as I notice for the first time that

place comes a raging pool of liquid heat, straight into monic isn't wearing a shirt. The laughter in me dies immediately and in its

my panties. Holy moly he is hot. As my eyes travel downward, toward the front of his drawstring pants, my mouth waters. I remember too well what treasures lie beneath.

Maybe I should stop teasing him and start tasting him instead.

I wonder how far he would go to stop me if I didn't let him. If I touched him the way I did this morning.

"What were the three of you talking about," Domonic hisses, stepping away from me and into the kitchen to retrieve his food.

"Animal anatomy," I quip before I can stop myself.

The three men in the room freeze and I swear I see true fear in Quinn's gaze as he shakes his head at me. His eyes are begging me to stop as his chest quakes with silent laughter. Domonic's back muscles tense and I trace each and every line with my eyes. Why doesn't he want me? Because I want him so badly that I'm practically dripping with need.

Just then, Koda's phone flashes on the counter. After checking it, his eyes meet mine and then without another word he heads out the front door.

Weird.

"Where the hell is he going?" Quinn questions, standing up to meet the menacing gray storm brewing in Domonic's gaze.

Domonic steps toward the sofa, plate in hand. Taking slow bites of his food. Every slice into his chicken is carefully controlled. His angry silver gaze goes straight for me. "Go upstairs."

The way he says it - in a voice laced with cruel demand - puts my natural born bitch on high alert. Ready her and preparing her for battle. "Excuse me?" I snipe, all amusement gone from my tone. He sizes me up in a slow perusal that is anything but friendly. "You heard me. Get your ass upstairs."

"Fuck you," I hiss. "No."

Quinn's eyes bulge, his lips going tight. "That's all right, I'm just going to go and-"

"No," Domonic says "You are not. I want to know what the fuck was so goddamn funny when I first entered this room and you're the one who's going to tell me."

"Fuck," Quinn sighs, his eyes falling shut.

"The fuck if he is," I snark, sitting my ass down on the sofa and crossing my legs. "Since you want to know so damn bad - I'll be the one to tell you."

"Please don't," Quinn breathes out.

Forty-Four

"Okay then, you tell me," Domonic says softly, his eyes glowing with barely contained fury. "Tell me all about the night of the full moon. The wolf and the man and the bigger and the better. Tell me." My face heats and I bite back a grin. This stupid bastard heard us. He heard the whole damn thing.

Suddenly I'm angry and the whiskey is roiling in my gut. "Fuck off," I seethe, standing up. "I'm going to bed. By myself," I grind out between clenched teeth. "Do not even think about joining me," I snap, climbing the stairs two at a time with the speed of an Olympic athlete.

Asshole. I hate him.

I make it two steps inside and swing the door closed with all the force I can muster, but it doesn't slam shut.

"What the fuck?" I say and attempt to turn around. But before I can make it, Domonic's smooth bare arms clamp around me from behind. His muscles lock me in as he lifts me further into the room.

Soft hot lips find the shell of my ear and he whispers, "You think I don't want you? We're back to that again, are we?" He pushes his hips forward, grinding his erection into the back of my ass and I groan. "Really?" He chuckles. "You called me a Priest. A puppy." "Let me go, whimper, my body trembling with need. "I don't want you touching me right now." Lies. Ha!

He releases me and I fall forward onto the bed. Edging backward, I turn around to stare at him

in anger, but what I feel when I see him - is anything but. The dark tattoos of Domonic's chiseled shoulders, quiver and expand with the heave of his chest. The deep dimpled smile he's giving me is full of arrogance as he reaches behind himself to lock the door and dim the lights.

Biting his lip, he stalks toward me slowly, his hand going to the seam of his pants and the thickening bulge there. "Are you sure you don't want me to touch you?" He whispers, untying the knot and slipping his hand inside to grab his dick. "Because I swear to God, that is all I have been wanting to do. And not just today. Not just yesterday or the day before. But every single day from the moment you stepped inside our bar and I smelled your perfect flavor from across the room." He chuckles. "How dare you think I don't want you."

My eyes feel heavy and my pussy clenches. Wetting my lips, I pull up on all fours, my gaze going straight for the slightly parted opening at the front of his pants. They drop

ever so slightly, teasing me with a flash of rock hard flesh. I moan, I can't help it. I want to taste him so badly I can almost feel him on my tongue stretching past my lips.

"Fuck," he chokes out. "You don't have any idea," he whispers, his biceps flexing as he steps to the foot of the bed. "I've been living in a state of constant pain. Every time I look at you, I want to bury myself inside your heat."

I gasp, finally shaking the last of my anger. Domonic's forearms are flexing, all of his muscles winding tight. Silver fire sparks from his eyes. He shakes his head as if trying to shred his thoughts, his brows furrowing in frustration. "Please," I whisper, my mouth falling open with want. "Can I kiss you?"

-

He nods, his jaw clenching as I crawl toward him on the bed. But it's my turn to drive him crazy. I want him to lose control. Want him to snap. He says he's been in pain? So have I! He's the one who's been denying us! Him not me!

I'm going to make this so painful he won't be able to push me away ever again.

I stop six inches from his dick and raise up off my hands so that I am kneeling in front of him. My lips are in line with his beautifully sculpted abs, but instead of leaning forward to lick them the way I want to, I run my hands up over my breasts and begin to unbutton my shirt. The muscles of his jaw tick with each button's release. One by one, I undo them all. Leaving the shirt on, but open. Just enough to cover each of my nipples.

He hisses, "Baby." He reaches forward, but I shake my head no.

"Take off your pants."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Forty-Five DOMONIC

45152

Breathe in, breathe out, breathe in, breathe out. Calen down on you're going to come in your pantu

God she is bel

Draven licks her lips and her hands retch on the hory bed covers. Her eyes are trained on the tip of my dick that sits over the top of my hand. My chest in heaving my fangs

tingling. We're so close to the full moon that I have to be very careful about how this goes down I don't want to hurt her and lost track of time. The surge of lust that is felt near this time of the month is always strong, but it's never been this intense. Just looking at her

with her panting on front of me - on her knees with her shirt open like that - she's deally

I want to touch her so badly my fingers are throbbing, "Baby," I hiss, lifting my hand.

She shakes her head no and I freeze, my dick twitching at her refusal. "Take off your pants," she says and she moans

Holy shit. Res.

Idea told carefully. My cock is throbbing and she's just close enough that when my pants drop, my dick is going to fall right against her skin, plush mouth. And that's exactly what happens

"Tack." I groan, closing my eyes against the exquisite feel of her warm breath against my flesh. I want to grab her. Want to wrap my arms around her by the back of her neck as she milks down her throat. But of course, I

My feet are rooted to the ground and my fists are clenched at my sides as she circles the base of my dick with two burning hands. My body trembles, a low rumbling up my chest. "Baby"

My eyes are still closed when I feel the hot wet stroke of her tongue over the head of my cock. My body tightens and I grit my teeth. She gives me one open mouth kiss, taking me three inches into her mouth, but no nose, and I can't resist the pleasure of it.

She's leaning over. But God it's so good

My eyes finally open and I watch her taste me, her hands stroking up and back in a gleam meant to cripple me at the knees. She is panting, her cheeks stroking against the side of my dick as she leans forward to kiss my abs. She. The head of my cock dips into her shirt and falls between her soft round breasts. One hardened nipple meets the chilled air and the left side of her shirt tumbles off her shoulder. Lightning flashes behind the shaded windows and the sight of one naked mound

In a flash of heat up my spine just as thunder rumbles outside.

She's perfect. Just as I knew she would be

I want her. I want that nipple in my mouth. My fangs - I can feel them filling in - they are aching with need just because my dick is.

"I'm going to touch you." I "I have to," I choke out, even as she shakes her head no.

I want to scream at her. But I can't.

What does she mean, tu?

She releases my dick to raise up and remove her shirt completely. The sight of her unbound, swollen breasts, lights a fire at the base of my balls and I growl. It's not

soft sound. No, it is harsh, strangled, and trembling with need.

I have to have her, I have to

I'm about to... about to shove her back and tip her pants away to plunge between her legs when she takes me deep into her mouth and her heavy round globes trace the outside of my thighs. "Jean," I moan, my spine tingles!

1/3

19:51 Wed, Nov 13 DO:

Chapter Forty-Five

51%

Blood rushes everywhere, electricity ringing up my shaft as her soft hands guide me to the back of her throat and the suction of her hot wet mouth moves over my dick. My hands go into her hair and I shove myself deeper, I can't help it. It feels so good.

"Exit" command, one hand falling out of her hair to grope one breast. The heaviness of it, the softness, causes me to moan, "Draven." She matches my hand, ripping it from her hair and causing me to snarl in anger. "Let me touch you I demand, Hii then I feel her teeth scrape a little too harshly over my cock in warning and groan.. "You're killing me, this

Her head is bobbing, her tongue swirling over me as she pumps me in and out of her mouth. The sight of her bare breasts has me tilting my head to see them better and my hand tightens in her hair as I begin to thrust mercilessly against her throat. Tek

The sight of my shaft disappearing in her mouth is too much for me and I know I'm to flood out. Her soft hands latch onto my hips and I feel her nerving her throat, getting ready to swallow me whole. "God," I tremble.

That is when I snap, my hips backing against her lips and my head falling back. As my dick wiggles inside of her mouth, she moans. The cock and stan shoot across my vision as I grimace my pleasure deep. She swallows and still behind her lips, my hands sting in

her hair pulses, my seed pouring into heaven in my eyes roll back and my legs go weak
lily fall over

My eyes are heavy as I pant for breath, my dick quivering when she pulls away from me. Her tongue glides over my shaft as she distends, finally causing me to wince. I'm glaring at her half-naked form as she leans back on the bed, smirking at me and wiping her chin. Her lips are swollen and I'm already getting hard again.

With inhuman speed, I shove her back onto the bed and whip her pants off in the same motion. Taking an ankle in each hand, I spread her legs apart, my eyes glued to the red them at the apex of her thighs. She gasps, Domonic,

I feel my fingers indenting my lips and her eyes go wide as I begin to climb over the top of her. My eyes take in every curve of her flesh as I do, my mind falling between her feet as I stroke my hands up over the butter-soft skin of her legs. So perfect. My gaze is steady on the red garment in front of me and Esq. "Have to taste you" She moans as my knees spread her thighs further apart and I bite my lip. "Have to touch you," This, Eating my cock with one hand and groping her breasts with the other. And you are not going to stop me," I growl out. "Shit," I whisper, releasing myself to pain both of her heavy mounds as her chest heaves in front of me. "You are so fucking soft."

I've never seen a more beautiful pair than the two that she was blessed with. Her nipples are large mocha-colored knobs that I squeeze between the webbing of my fingers. As I grip and mash them inside of my hands I bite back another groan. Relaxing one in front of me, I extend my hand down her stomach. I trace the outline of her sex along the soaked silk of her thong. Her back shoots up off the bed and I clamp one hand over her throat, anchoring her as I plunge two fingers inside of her heat. Her pussy is fairly weeping with nectar and the scent of it causes me to

fuck," I breathe out, pumping my fingers in and out slowly. She's hat inside-tight melted velvet- and I shudder at the thought of what it might feel like to sink my dick inside her heat. Her nipples tab into my forearm and I shift my hand up and stroke her throat so that they stroke against my skin. The feeling sends a roar of need throughout my body and my muscles clench in response, my finger curling inside of her as she begins to moan

Domonic," she whimpers, her hands clamping down on my wrists over her chest. Her oils bite into my muscles and my grip on her neck tightens.

Removing my fingers, I push one thigh up and out, to slide my hand under her plump, forgiving ass and give it a squeeze before ripping the thong away from her sex. Her eyes lock on mine for the briefest moment before my gaze falls down between her legs, I grit my teeth at the sight of her perfect slit, licking my lips as my fangs slide completely free.

"Oh God," she moans, her eyes flaring at the sight

For a second, afraid they're going to disgust her, but one look in her sparkling greyes tells me they're turning her on. I release throat to slide my hands just beneath her breasts, holding her still with my thumbs caressing each at the base Dipping my head downward, 1 growl of the fesh of her lips, my mouth closing over her soft wat het

She backs upward. "Please," she moans and the sound my dick into a thick steel rod.

My tongue dps between her lips and into her pussy, the muscles there clamping and enching-begging for more depth. I suckle and plunge, stroking her clit before dracing my fangs gently-up the side of her sex. With every circle of my tongue she gasps, moaning and grinding against my lips. I take her there, swallowing wach tiemble, managing her center and gaveings. The feeling is electrifying, and I clamp my mouth over her mound, sucking as I fuck her with my tongue. Her "Hands go into my hair, the pain of them driving me wild with need. I want her to come, but I want to see it in her eyes when she does. I want to feel her crack apart underneath me as 1-swallow her tongue inside of my mouth. I release her mound and push one finger inside of her tightness, the shudder of her pussy licking on Throbbing and trembling, she searches for pleasure, her eyes begging for mare

"Oh God, please," she whimpers and I shiver.

2/3

19:51 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Forty-Five

Gazing down at her - she is the most beautiful thing 1 Junin mor serni

I know I shouldn t fuck her. I know it will make everything that comes after that much harder t dick in puduing with fire. It is pounding with the urgent need to choke prself inside of her beat.

Through, but everything about her in screaming for

"Fuck." My upward, meeting her eyes. I want to be inside jou"

Chapter Comments

12

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Forty-Six

-

DHLAVEN

"Yes," I choke out, the taste of him still on my tongue, "Please," I beg

The view of his naked body hovering over me is almost more than I can handle.

I want this man. Need him beside of me. The way he is looking at me -like in my chest treasure that he doesn't know how to hold is driving me crazy. The sight of his fangs biting over his hip have started a witon throbbing at the base of my throat. An urging for him to taste me there. To taste me there: I don't and but I can't anymore either and the longer his goes on, the more the ache becomes

He reaches for me and I whimper. "Don't stop," As his hands glide over my skin.

He caresses me from the base of my thighs to

against my skin caresses me to his own shoulders. Falling heavily against he spreads my leg apart with his power & Phish.

pleasure.

"I have never wanted anything like I have wanted you," he groans, dipping his head to take my breast into his mouth. My back rises off the bed again as the intense pleasure he brings with the sharp scratch of his fangs over my nipple. "You are fucking painful to look at." The heavy weight of his dick on my sex has me moving against him, gliding up and down to tempt him inside. My hands rip into his hair and I pull his mouth to mine, tongue sliding over his lips as he groans against me,

One hand goes between my legs as he positions his cock at my entrance, his eyes loom mine and he licks his lips. "Once I start, I won't be stopped.

Loudly and frantically, I need you. Please

ΠE

it,

His eyes search mine as he pushes the tip inside me, curling against my hips with his penis. "No matter where you go," he says, his eyes dropping toward my lips. "You will always be mine."

No matter where I go? What?

"Demonic" I start, but he plunges into me, grunting in he fills me to the hilt and I cry out in pain. My entire body is stretching and I'm panting for breath as he still inside of me, mousing into the side of my neck. In fangs dragging over the serve ache of my skin "You are so fucking tight, he hisses, "Mom God Fuck. His tongue stretches out, tagger the base of my throat. The look in his eyes, dark and tormented. He ndulates against me, pressing the tip of his fangs over my neck for a long shuddering moment. We are from there, panting against each other. Then he closes his

- raising his teeth. You feel so good," he point 'I can't be profle. I cant'

I don't respond. I'm still in pain, wincing as he begins to move inside me. Palling out and punching in with unforgivable farce. Electricity zings up from my cone, driving in ear piercing moan from my lips as my body works to accommodate his size. He's pending into me and I'm racing to catch up in the pleasure begins to hest between my thighs. I'm thramning with energy, my hands scraping down his mular back as he rises up on his elbows to watch me bounce against his hip His mouth falls open, his fangs lashing out as his silver eyes sparkle with lust. One hand all over my breasts, squeezing and pulling as mine move over his shoulders then plant against his chest. I bite my pas my center begins to wand tau. My muscles are clenching hiss, milking him inside of me as the pain begins to melt into pleasure and a chorus of moun rise from my mouth. Trailing my hands over the muscles of his stomach, I dip a hand between us is an attempt to slow his thrusts.

"Wait," I whimper, knowing I'm on the brink of orgasm and stupidly thinking I make it last forever.

"No" he

he says, pounding harder, his eyes sealing to mine. Tim going to explode so deep imide of you that you will ever be rid of me," he growls, dropping his weight fully onto mine and moaning in my ear as his tempo rises.

The bed is slamming into the wall, his grunts filling my ear. I'm spiraling, my body arching upward and into his penishing thrusts. My center combusts, "Domonic!" I scum his name so loud, I can feel the echo I incinerate, my bly falling slack as trembles of pleasure ride over me. "D" I whimper. "God" I say in a voice that in half cry and

Wn-My heading dips back and my eyes love focus as I go limp beneath him.

"Wih, shit," he mouts, slamming into me sleppily and jerking against my hips. His tongue circles my ear in time with the rhythm of his final pups and he presses his face into the side of mine. "Fuck, baby," he gasps, groaning so deep it tingles my spine. "Fuck!" He shouts, and I feel him expand deep in my core. Anchoring along my walls. His seed pours inside of me dilling me with moten hest

He is heaving on top of me as I pop for breath. The steel of his muscles pressing at my bosom and his care around me and he shudders inside of my worth. My eyes fall shut as I lay there, exhausted, and throbbing from relevance.

1/3

19:51 Wed Nov 13

Chapter Forty-Six

"Sleep," he whispers. "If I pull out of your tight me, I hurt you this fangs are gone he presses his lign agent mine, gently, Sharking on my kantom fig an entity shirt. "Sleep," he says again, and I do

I wake with a sated smile on my face, timing over in bed, stretching my arm out toward Domonit. My Bogers et rood sheets and my

Leaping from the bed I grab a sweater and westpants from his closet and den. He probably downtown making breakfast I afixe a pren and spend a long t in the mirror, my fagers traipsing over the swell of my lips as I smile. My skin in lundtown, my hair wild flooding freshly forked I smick at myself, splashi water on my face, then exit the room to bounce down the stain. Sure, Ini

The first floor windows have all been

add and notice for the first time that the atom from last night still rages. Lightone tacheri mainland is barely visible from this tiny island. My eyes fall and the pier, and my freath batches. The yacht is gone. All that remarat its) Looks like its battling the waves to say allow Morning gorgeous," Quinns voice sounds from the kitchen and I per around the wall to see him making coffee

"Morning" " I say brighth, stepping toward him, "Where's the patter

He turns around to hand me a mug

"What the fuck happened to your face?"

MTMI

He chucklen, the black and blue of his eye crinkling. I was assaulted by a priest."

Rage burns up my body from my head to my toes and I hiss, I will slap the shit out of him why did he do that? Because of last night?"

I'm angry, my hand fists at my side as Quinn pour coffee into my cup with a shing was my fault Draven. I really shouldn't have been talking about" He pause "animul anatomy with you. He's right. It was an inappropriate conversation."

I'm soothing, my eyes scanning the windows, searching for any ign of Domonic. "Where the hell is he?"

Quinn winers Chun. He left"

I thought I was mad before...

Im sure my face is best red when I whip my phone out and dial Dom's number.

"Momine" he says, answering on the first ring.

"You left?" screech. "Bally?"

I can hear the yacht engine on the backgeband and the knowledge that I probably missed him pisses me

'I have busness to take care of You're safe. I can't spend all day cudding."

alf even more.

For a moment - a very brief moment - En hurt by his words. But if I've learned anything about this asshole, it's that he enjoys making me angry and he hides his true feeling behind a pretense of indifference. 11 map

He chuckles into the phone and I can't help but blush. Cad

"Thave to get Michael's body to Cryffin. He says one of the girls in and student. She wants to take a few samples and keep him on. 111 be back by dinner."

I given, "You better be. And remember, you promised I could talk to the doctor."

A sigh. Imember."

1 for say I love you but I'm not a fool, so I don't. "Okay."

2/3

19:51 Wed, Nov 13. E

Chapter Forty-Six

Tell Quinn I left him an der js

Really? I glare at the phone. "Asshole,"

1 glance

studying Quinn face and hissing my displeaser, "I cannot believe he Hi you "

Quinn laughs, 'Reilly? Because I suprised he let me livet

"Oh come on," I reply. He can't be that possessive.com-"

Test off when Quinn shoots me a sharp look of disbelief.

-"Day - you're right. I guess he can be," I say, shruggine

No worries, Draney baby. In a wolf. I be healed by much." He winks.

"Draven," Koda says, tapping softly on my shoulder

"Yes" I almost forgot about the fire in the cave and the way he ran out the door last night,

515%

Rod signals to follow him and we both dimh the stairs toward his son, He stop walking when we teach his bedroom door and he tunt kinda need your help with something" around to face me. I

enver him as I sip my coffee and I scaly choke on the black brow when spy the raging hand on in his pants.

My eyes graze in

Am," I say. "I don't think I should."

He startles "What?" Then he notices the direction of my grand he chuckles. Not with that," he says, amused. He opens the door to his room, "With this "

My eyes trail over his shoulder and into his space which is an ost identical copy of Comics if you don't count that it's amallet,

"Hello, a soft voice says and I pr

"Helly" I say.

Chapter Comments

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,536 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1-No Mates Chapter Forty-Seven

TRAVEN

51%

Sitting on the edge of Koda's bed, is an absolutely gorgeous, totally soaked, trembling young woman. She is delicately hule, with super king white-blend luir straight as straight can be. It falls like a curtain over her tan face and dank on eyes. Her chorls er streaked with dirt and her clothes are ripped in places that proral a little more than she's probably comfortable with. My eyes dart in where Koda is standing, looking desperate and mortable. The cave?" I ask.

He nods. "I kept an eye on it last night, but I could bring her in until Damond left

Ljerk, "Why not?"

Koda merely thengs, tossing arter and sweats toward the girl on the best. "She's all yours, I have to get to the mainland.

"Wait!" I sputter: "What do you mean, she's all mine I shap. No offense," I say to the it, who simply nods, "What-I-you-

have to get to work," Kodi says deadpan, then leaves,

the stairs

"When will you be back? I claim, but he ignores me and I growl. "Excuse me for it one tiny litle second, I tell her before racing down the stars.

1 catch up with Koda as he is putting on his raincoat near the front doo

He sighs heavily when he sees me. "What?"

"What?" I laugh "Seriously? I don't understand what's going on. I

Koda shoots a look toward the kitchen meeting Quinn's eyes for a long moment. "She's been staying in that cave for three days. According to her, she was abandoned here by somebody, but she won't tell me who "The girl?" Quinn quips and I glare. She has that smell," he says, meeting Koda's ever "You know the one.

Kod face turn almost beet red. His eyebrows furrow and his gaze diets toward

Quinn stares at him quizzically. "Couldn't you smell it?

Koda shrugs, swallowing thickly. "The rain must have hidden it from me,"

glare at Quinn, "You knew about her too

He shakes his head. 'Not until after Domonic lett. She's cute. I'll help you with her. We can feed her and groom her, it'll be fun. She can be our pet." "Really?" I snipe and he laughs,

"Look," Koda says, whispering into my ear. "Something happened to her I can tell. Something I think she'd be way more comfortable talking about to a women

*But-" I complain, tugging at my hair. "Domonic will be back later and I was spare work today! When am I getting out of here?

Koda laughs, throwing me a wink as he opens the front door. "Judging by everything heard through the wa

I smack his shoulder, my face heating, "Shut the hell up, I'm serious"

Jest night I'd have to say, "

"So am I," Koda prins. "Due to the danger our newest inmates present back on the land, the bar is closed until after the next full moon. According to Demonic, you'll be staying here until thend of next week" "Like hell I screech. "What is with you guys and this full moon bullshit?"

Koda smiles. "Ask Quinn. He can explain." Then he is out the door and into the rain

"I hate your" I shout at him through the open doorway. Just want you to know that

1/3

19:51-Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Forty-Seven

He blows me won, but I don't miss the way his eyes scan the trees before shooting toward his third story window.

He shouts at me just as lightning flashes set the water. Tell Quinto scout the winch,

I fed them lock the door and figs it off. Then I turn around and fare Quin. I assume you heard him

He nods. 17 go right after breakfast"

"I hope you made enough food for three. I'm going to go and see about our guest. Then I groan, "He didn't even give me her fuckig name?"

DOMONIC

"Let's try this one more time," I say, slicing another long gash down the god doctors left side. Hopefully you won't die before I can get my ame be a shame because I promised someone very important to me that she would get to have a few words with you" The

man is bleeding from almost every inch of his body. I've had to live into him tedly to keep him from changing. Onor tranquil hhaman rm. As opposed to the doctor, who I had to weaken with blood loss, just to force him to a human shift. Seems to m but Marcus was not. He begins to chuckle, the chains along his wrists Battling. "Oh yes, beautiful Drawn truly meet place of meat" be smaris.

Controlet, Dal yourself. Unfortunately, I can feel my fangs shit out and my class begin to itch.

you want to die? I ask through a mouthful of weth

He grows, To you?"

Though as my class begin to lach out. "What is your deal? Why change that piece of in the other cell into a shifter? What the lack was the purpose in that? You must have a family somewhere. Others like you?

For a small moment, the doctor trembles. 'No. I don't." His dark brown eyes lih to none. They were bunted and killed shortly after I was bom.

Well boo fucking hoo," I snap. "So you're a fucken orphan. Who raked you?"

He smarts, "I was raised by the very man who killed my parents. He kept me as his pet until I grew too strong for him. Then he attacked me in my sleep and I killed him for it."

I have to laugh at that, sing him to grow in anger and me to slice him a lle der with my nie. "So what? Couldn't you have picked a more worthy human ba bestow your gift upon?"

He chuckles, "It's not about a worthy human, stupid dog. It's about finding one with the right genes. I tried my work on many others before him. Good people. People who didn't have long to live. People who had enough money to pay for the formula manufacturing costs. None of them had the right make-up. Then I found Leo and Marcus. They not only had the money, but the genetic mutation was there as well. It lay dormant He laughs again, his eyes bright. "I simply woke it up."

I grow, "So this bullshit about Draven's mother being too old-"

"Lies," he laughs, his oily black mustache dripping with spit, "I tested her for the gene. She did have it, but not in the mitated form. I apled to set on the mutation by alberative means but"

"It killed her," I say

De nods, "Yes, it did. I told Marcus as much but he didn't want to listen. He truly in love with the chit. I think he intends to transfer those feelings onto her daughter. He simply refuses to see reason."

The next question I am about to ask, I know will determine whether or not I allow Deven to speak to this mad scientist at all. 'Did Draven's mother know what you

The doctor sits back and nods. She did. She was just as huch in love with Marcus was with her. The stupid birch. 1

I sold her it might kill her. But she didn't

vin

The disrespectful way the doctor speaks about Draven's mother has me wanting to side into him again. But at the same time, my heart aches for Draven and anger

2/3

19:51 Wed, Nov 13 B

Chapter Forty-Seven

for her mother me to the cor. 3 why did he think you could change Draken

Doc Vas grow out in prin as I slice into one of his wounds that has began to heal, told him I could test her for the gene. After all, it simply is a mutation genetic sequence. But

he took liberties with the girl before I could get to her. Forcing himself on her. Despite that his son wanted her and

"What?" I snap, interrupting. "His son wanted her? You're lying!"

51%

"Oh? Why? Because Michael said otherwise?" Dot Vas begins to giggle. You silly, sheild, matt Der Vas hours with Inughter. "Michael was a dupe in many ways. We used him for about a year. He was desperately in love with Lea, you see. They not at school and Michael was always following around. We thought, we could use his desperation to put advantage. If we could test the theory on him before Draven, in finding a safe way to mutate the gene in him, without killing him" He smiles,

then we could do so for Deaven without her ever being the wiser." He spits, "Michael was a hacking guinea pig.

My vision blurs, Leaping forth to place my knife against his throat, I anal, "Where is be? Tell me where he is or I'll kill you right here and

Do Vas whines, choking as I slice a half a centimeter into his throat, "1-1 truly don't know! He was supposed to meet in here, but he nee

I hiss into his eat, my body shaking with rage, Then I guess we really don't need youve anymore. Now do we?"

I make one slice across his neck and he gargles. Then I rip his head off with my bare funds and throw it on the floor next to his twitching legs.

Rainier races down the hall toward me, stopping short when he steps into the pool of blood that now paints the floor. "Fuck," he says

"Burn this place of shit," I tell him. "I have some hunting to do

Chapter Comments

11

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Forty-Eight

DRAVEN

"So tell me this" I start, taking a seat on the white leather ottoman in front of the table.
"What's the big secret behind the full moon!"

Quinn sighs, glancing up at the ceiling as if worried about the girl, Emily, bearing in "You really should ask Domonic."

51%

I groan, feeling the urge to pull out my hair. "I'm making you. And if you wanted about the girl, don't do that. She's soaking in a bath that I ran for her myself. Like some kind of fucken mother hen." I roll my eyes. Quinn smiles, "You know. If you were to stick around here and he with Demand? That's exactly what you would be"

I slant my eyes at him, curious, "What do you mean if I stick around here? I sure as hell don't plan to leave. I like this place. In you pry. 1., bie Why would I leave"

His dark eyes lower, filling with something akin to sadness. "I don't know. It's just sucks in a deep breath and glances out the window-Dom"

Tucker heartless sometimes. He does things to protect himself that I think will end up doing him more harm than good."

My eyes arts. "What kinds of things?"

Im trished" Emily's voice flits down the stairs and the soft thudding of her dainty et follow
1." Phias, pointing at him. "We are not finished talking about this."

He nods, standing up to lock eyes with our guest. "Hello Emily, I'm Quinn,"

She smiles, "Hi" Her eyes scan the room, then fall on the lone plate of boron and as the dining table. "Is that-"

"For you." I answer. "Yes. Yes it is. He yourself. We ate while you were in the back"

"Thank you," she says softly, taking a seat at the dining table and shoveling the food to her mouth.

"Get her some jaire," This at Quinn who is openly staring at her.

Ill think I'm in love," he whispers.

Oh for Pets sake! I slap

up his arm. Juice. Now before the chokes!"

He nods and walk into the dining area contemplating on how best to approach the ject
Roda mentioned to me before he left. By the time I seat myself next to her, she's
already done. More?" ask with a laugh. "Please?" She grins, thanking Quinn as he sets
a full tumbler of orange juice next to her plate.

"She'd like more Quinn," I say. Then, "After you serve her seconds would you mind take
care of that chore in the woods you promised to get done?"

He stares at me for what feels like an entire minute of cluelessness. "Chore?"

sat

"In the woods." I repeat. "You know, Checking the trees for I smile at Emily "Heave

"Leaves?" Quinn queries. Are you He grips," oh oh right! Leaves. Uh yeah. Sure!"

"Thanks "Plaky," Blaugh

"Ha ha ha. Fuck you Brain, he pips, then flips me off while heading into the kitchen far
more food.

"What's wrong with the leaves?" Enuly

tasks, lam arjora

1/3

19:52 Wed Nov 13 0

Chapter Forty-Eight

Ch she is too precunes. "Hopefully nothing." That's all I can say. I don't want to

there might be something hiding in them. Nope. Not doing that

She then smiles as Quinn sets her plate down in front of her, full of food one. "The hock
in twenty. You girls behune,"

a chuckle, watching him head out the door in nothing but a pair of cotton pejama

He's going out in the main like that?" Ensily snickers, "Want he get cold?"

"He's not the brightest,' I say, Inghing to myself at the absurdness of my tema

"Thats too bad," she says with a sigh, before digging into her fool this time with rice
class. He's really nice.

I laugh, "Right." I smile at her, my eyes wandering over what I can see of her body. Her wrists have a couple of long scratches and there are handprint neck scars, Emily, um Koda "Koda? Is he coming back here? I really wanted to thank him for looking out for me again,"

"Apam?" I quirk, my eyebrows raising sky high. "Didn't you just meet him last night?"

She shakes her head no. I met him about a month ago when I was camping in the hills near Port Orchard. I had a pretty crazy fire going and he helped me put it

How intending "Really?" I say "A month ago?"

The nod "yeah. Apparently I was illegally camped in a No fire zone. He was a real jerk about it. But when I told him I didn't have anywhere to go and tried to keep warm, he let me slide without a ticket." arms over my chest and glare, "Then what did he do? Leave you out there

She nods, "Yeah. I mean, what was he supposed to do? I'm just a stranger." She sighs, taking a deep drink of her juice. The next day found a tent, sleeping bag, and a portable solar powered heater in the same spot I'd been sleeping in and-" She takes a deep breath, well-I just know he had to be the one who left it for me

A damn sleeping bag and a tent?" I growl out to him. And she's fucken grateful???

She's like a pure, innocent, imbecilic angel. Or maybe she's one of those girls who has been treated like shit her entire life and has no idea what she's setting off. And what happened to those things? I mean - how did you end up out

She drugs her fork, her eyes lowering behind extremely long lashes. I met this guy, said he'd take care of me. He said-" She shakes her head. "that we could be friends. But that was obviously all bullshit."

"A give" I snort. How typical Ecken pigs. "Is he the one that put those bruises on neck?" I ask point blank.

She closes her eyes, nods. "Yeah, He did."

I reach a hand out for her to hold and am surprised when she takes it. "This guy he hurt you, didn't he?" She nods K L

her eyes filling with tears, I told him to stop. I begged him to But he-he-"

"Shhh, it's okay. Take it slow, I tell her, sighing. "I don't need all the details right now

She nods softly, wiping her tears with the cuff of her sweater sleeve. "Thank you"

God this girl is like a tiny little lamb. Where did she come from? "Emily?" "Yes?"

"How old are you?"

"Twenty-one in a week."

Turk. If you don't mind any asking -

2/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 DI

Chapter Forty-Eight

04 51%

ly grandma raised me, but when she died, I had to go and stay with my mom

Emily sucks in a shuddering breath. At home, they kicked me out over a monthly in Tacoma. Her and her boyfriend didn't want me there. So they kicked me out."

You know, sometimes people are beasts too. "Usfucking believable," I sigh. "Well, your troubles are over sweetie. I've got you now and where I go you go from here on out. I can get you a job and a place to stay Her eyes brighten. 'R-really?"

Hell yes. And, I want to know all about that bastard that hurt you. Just so happens am pretty good friends with the maryer," I wink

"The mayor?" She gapes in asee. (

I laugh. "He's not mally the mayor - but he fucking acts like one. That's for sure. Either way, I've got your back"

She smiles and I notice it lights up her face. Thank you Thane. Thanks so mu so much."

"No problem. Bart will hire you at the bar. You can work with me," I say, and somehow I know without even asking, that this is true. Bart anything for me I just know t

It's nice in this house. Is this where you live?"

Ile, They wish, but no. For me so I've been banished here for the week while the bar is closed. But we'll talk more about that later. Why don't you tell me about the asshole who left you here fint."

"Oh!" She shakes her heal. "I be didn't leave me here. He took me out on a host four days age. He left me in the water,

ime with that statement. Anger like I have never known drenches my soul. "He - did -

She takes a deep breath. After he-am-well-hru-used me he dumped me in the water. Then he sped off in his boat, I swam here. In the fog. I didnt even know

Lisland at first. I thought it was just a rock. But when I climbed up, some of the fog lifted and I could see the house on the hill When I Ingeled on the door, no wered and I couldn't get in. The glass is pretty much bullet proof. Trust me, thew quite a few rocks at it."

"Goon" I seethe.

"Well, then I searched around back and found the shed was open. It has all kinds of camping gear inside. Sleeping bags, and fishing poles. I had my old lighter in my pocket, so let it dry out and hit a small fire. But then last night-1 heard the boats coming and I hid in the cave."

Holy shit," I say. "You poor thing."

She shrugs. "This is the most food I've had in about two months. Thanks again."

So this guy that dumped you in the ocean," I say conly. "What was his name?"

She shiver. "Les. He called himself - Leo*

Chapter Comments

11

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,515 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Forty-Nine"

DOMINIC 51%0

'It's going to be you, the, Lief, and Grant. We need to spread out in each direction thaji tirde the area. Well come back in from the opposing diretion and pour de land on all sides simultaneously. If he i here somewhere, I want him found. He javi rend to catch his scent. Now that we know what it smells like, se

to track him down. Especially with his father in lock-up.

Koda nods, his eyes shifting around the station. "When are we heading lock in the luajal?"

"Not until after we get a hit," I say in a resigned voice, thinking of Thunen and how does going to be pissed when she finds out what I've done in the doctor.

Shit. Who cares about that part? Instead, think of how heartbroken she's going to be when you send her away.

My chest aches at the thought

Damn it. I really shouldn't have slept with her, but on the bright side-she'll be carrying my scent for the rest of her life. No matter when

And when she does leave and meets someone else? Where?

An image flashes before my eyes of Draven and a faceless man I see him riding on of her the way I did last night and I feel my fangs tingle with the strength of my anger. Her moans, her softness, her tightness - all his for the taking. Fuck my vend. She's too beautiful to go on alone for too long. And my chest is aching again.

Just think about how you will for if she bars to death in here because someone wanted to get to you

That is something that I believe would thoroughly ruin my life. And here I was, thinking my father was weak, when in reality - he's still standing. He's still alive. If something happened to Draven on my watch? I don't think that could live through. Maybe our father are stronger than we think,

I shake my head. I can't think about that now, I have a pincher to find.

My phone rings and I whip it out to see Draven's name flash across the screen

I got like a fuckin' satellite frequency to my mind. Every time I think of her, she calls

Well, not every time. I spent the entire yacht ride over replaying our night together in my head and she didn't call until I pulled into the dock. Then again, she was sleeping. Like a damned angel of hell sent to torment my

"Draven I say into the phone.

Un-hey. Are you busy?"

God I love her voice. My balls single at the sound of it.

am, but I have ment

hear her on the other end of the line pacing. She's nervous about something this may sound a little weird but I need Koda's number"

My hand locks over the prose and my eyes go straight to Koda and his ears perk up listening me he heard what she said. No fucking way. They weren't realise long And why would the want him after dies had met it wouldn't couldn't be as good with him. "What the feck would you want him for Draven? You have no business talking to him; 1 growl, my eyes narrowing at my brother in front of

She laughs, low and sexy, the Every that she does when I piss her off and in spite of me, I smile. "He left me in charge of something here and I need to let him know that I got some information on it."

1/3

119:52 Wed, Nov 13 0.

Chapter Forty-Nine

"Feck that - pru dimî't need his number. He's standing right here, What's this about Driven?"

"He in?" She says nervomly and my i

pchest begins to rumble with anget. Oh you know what, I think it can wait until tonight. Iyer"

"Hey wait a minute! Draven?" But she's hung up,

at Koda, my eyes sharp with fury. Tire to explain?" I him, "Now. Before I slp your throat out!

Koda nods. "Right."

DRAVEN

Oh shu oh shit of shipp

Maybe that want the best idea. I should have just waited for Quinn to get back in and then told him to test Roda with what I've lea

Why am I so stupid?

"What happened?" Emily inquires softly.

Th. Nothing. Phock 111 just wait for Quinn and have him call Koda instead."

She and I were huddled on the couch while she gave me all the gory details of the ank she spent as Les pet

Aria what is wing with that family?

Apparently La came across her in the woods and invited her to stay in his boathouse He took her out onto the ocean and wined her and dined her. Pretending to care for her. The bastard. He sedvond her out of her virginity. Then as the week went, he became mor and more violent. She said he kept complaining about how horrible women are. How they cannot be trusted. That each and every night, he becade mon agitated until finally he fed himself on her for hours before throwing her into the ocean and leaving her for dead. The one thing she never mentioned was that Loo was a panther. So maybe he never shifted in front of her at all. It might be that she has no idea shifters exist. Same

I didnt before Marcus came into my life.

I thought about throwing a few comments out there. Comments about seeing strange things. Men that seem to be half animal and half human. But then I realized- its not my secret to tell. Maybe it would have been. If I hadn't willingly slept with one last night. But I did and now I feel the need to tread carefully with that ktowledge. I will not see any of my twelve fonte puppies hurt.

Puppies. Oh how they would die to hear that that is how I see them. As peret, cuddly puppies. Not giant angry wolves which is probably closer to the truth.

bat guy Donsonic your boyfriend?" Emily coos.

1 smile, my face heating to a thousand değers "Sure. I guess I mean I sigh. "I don know, We haven't really said anything like that but, he certainly likes to act. like he is,"

She smiles, blushing. "When I fint met Koda, out on the trail I thought for a minute that he liked me. He caught me trying to put out the fire i created and when he grabbed me into his arms he-un-be-" She pauses. "I don't know. Nevermind. This is probably going to sound damh," 1 bite my lip. "No! Go on. You don't have to worry. I'm not going to tell him anything After that phone call - I'll be lucky fever get to speak to him again.""

She laughs. "Well, I'm not even sure how to explain it. It was almost like the fire was already gone. He didn't even look at it. Just stared at me. Like deep into my eyes, you know? And for the silliest moment I thought he was going to kiss me. But then, he turned angry. He pushed me away from the fire and put it out in lest

than two minutes." Her face falls. Then he yelled at me for five minutes. Telling me how stupid I was and that he had every right to rent me"

I dare. That idiot. I school my franapes, trading my scowl for a smirk. 'But he didn't seest you. He brought you supplies instead."

"she says, fidgeting with the sleeves of Koda's sweater. "He's so beautiful. When I saw him again fast night. I thought I was dreaming"

I sigh. That's kind of how I felt when I first saw Damon, Like everything else in the vanished the since that day, it's like I can feel when he's near me. Not

In the psychic sense. But I can literally feel his heat any time he gets clone. Whether can sw him or not?

2/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Forty-Nine

"Have you and he

"Yes!" I cut her off before she can sing the memory of last night flashing forward amore than she already just did. I don't have any entra pastes out here. I need to keep the poor I have dry.

Hmm. I should text Domenic and tel bies to bring me at ser. LOL

In fact that's exactly what I do.

"Nice." She frowns. "I mally dont think, Koda likes me such though. Both times that live sen him, bra linen angry with me. This time was no reception. I think the only reason why he brought me here was because he could tell Id been attacked by sent." dhe ask you what happened?!

She nods, her eyes going sad, "He did. But I didn't want him to yell at me about how stupid I'd been, ya know? Erry girl from the time th prt into cars with strangers. In this case it was a boot, but the same thing really

I gun. The fact that he took the time to yell at you at all, says something. He's a mad few words, that guy. He usually just shrugs and

Hello ladies Quinn says coming in the front door. "What'd I miss?""

What happened to your black eye?" Emily gasps. "It's totally

1 gulp. Shit. It sure is

Chapter Comments

POST COMMENT NOW

12

< SHARE

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,163 words]

Chapter Fifty

DRAVEN

"Black eye?" He shrugs. "No black eye. It most have been a trick of the light. De maybe a kada

Enih glares. I know what a black eye looks like, thank you very much."

Quinn gives her his sexiest I am a werewolf grin. "I don't know what to tell you the

Because as you can see, there's not a ti

a tingle muck on my pretty little

1 roll my eyes bravenward. Oh lord. "How are the leones?: Lash Quin, who is still maki chons to taste.

Emily like she's a new flavor of Joe cream that he just

"He says, tiening his attention to me

The leaves

He chuckles. "Oh, yeah. Right. They re all good."

"Olav, Emis says with a laugh. "What are you guys really talking about? Because I know you weren't really out there checking the leaves."

ly, and is not a lie.

wel bless her silly little heart. So glad she's not stupid. "Trespassers," I say easily, and Emys her smile. "Oh, I see, You were checking my story. Makes sense."

She trembles, her feelings obviously a bit hurt. "Just so you know, I'm not much of a liar, I mean- I like stories just as much as the next girl, but I don't know are

I shake my head. "Oh, Emily no! "

she tempts. "I guess it is hard to believe that I am here in the dark

"Som here in the dark?" Qui empts and I nod at him, shushing him with a look.

She yells. "I promise you, I'm telling the truth. The will to live gave me perhuman strength that night and by the grace of God I made it."

"Emily!" I half snap. Her eyes go wide and she bites her bottom lip. "I believe you, I swear I do. Quinn was just making sure that the person you said abandoned you wasn't still out there. We were just trying to keep you safe." I meet Quinn's eyes. Arenting to Emily someone she met a guy named Les" Quinn's eyes light with fire."-dumped her in the ocean that night and that is where he left her. In the voter alone. With nothing but sharks to talk to."

""Leo?" Quinn says quietly and I nod. "On a boat?"

"A houseboat," I clarify. "I think you should probably text Roda and let him know. Do now"

"Well why didn't you-t

[trind"" I shout, glaring at him. "You can guess how far I got with it."

He laugh. "Oh right. Ha ha, that a funny"

"It's really not though. I'm going to have to do something about Mister Mayor's vetin powers when he gets back here.

"Mister Mayor Emily gizzles.

-

1/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Fifty

DOMONIC

"A girl in the worch," I say, after Soda's ja told me that he found a girl on our Packing island.

A human hiding out on an island that the had no way of getting to unless she were or a poddanim mermaid

She said she abandoned these. She's hamless, Koda says. "Even a little chunsy *Chimay how

The in the woods a month

She camed it

thought you said there was no one there when you put it oral. "

Koda shrugs. His phone pings with a best message and Ewatch his features suspiciously.

Draven isn't stapid. When I denied her Koda's number-Tim sure she somehow charmed it out of Quinn, which in turn will eam him another black eye

Bodes unreadable and for some reason I cant being myself to ask if the message was in fact from Draven, or if it was from somebody else, I'll find out when I'm alone. I have complete access to all of Draven smessages through an app on my phone, & wet I've kept completely to myself along with her phone number and the intricatingly sweet taste of her skin. If the bow been texting Koda br Quinn-or Rainier or even Bart it will make what I'm planning to do to get her to leave- just a tiny bit easier to pull off Who are you kidding? I might make you want to keep her even more.

Burl can't. And I won t

toda a eyes go dark as he reads his test. These parthens. They're from Miami, right?

1 mod, now truly curious about the message be received.

What if one of them traveled by boat?"

-

My body tenses. That could be very possible. That would make a lot of sense. We welldn't be able to track his scent as easily along the water. And the Doctor did say that Lab was supposed to meet them here. The way he said it implied that he honestly had no idea where Leo might be. Almost as if his arrival could be deterred in some way. A

storm perhaps. Or choppy waters. Any of those things might make traveling by boat take longer. The Doc said Lee wanted Draven for himself and

with his father about it. So Lea may have had no intention of meeting up them at all. Which also means, he may have no intention of resting them. My fists clench and I meet Roda's eyes shu. To get here on Mand-by boat Leo would have had to leave Florida around the same time Draven arrived here on the train. Which meant

status and the Doc were tracking her sent the ente time," Koda states.

"Tack," I has with sudden clarity. "And Degen probably had no idea that Marcus coa flow his scent on her, so she really thought she'd gotten away" I groad, "These fucken let her think she escaped. When she never actually did. My throat clo

That also means that of Draven had Extended to me that day and left this place on the train the way I told her to- might have lost her forever. She might have been taken by them and raped again or worse-killed. And it would all have been my fault. The realision is crippling in its intensity and the slow che in my chest just got a thousand times more painful

"Ire heading to the docks," Koda says, jumping kito his SUV before I can even give him the okay.

As he screeches out of the parking lot, the look on his face is completely fecal. He les as if he is having a hard time containing his anger. Almost like he wants Lea for hilf. Like Len wronged somehow.

Nak. Na way Stop thinking that crazy shit. She's mine, They all know she mine.

Could Kodalye feeling that protective of ay gift Or is it something else?

I shake myself of my paranoid thoughts and stop back into the Sheriff Station will Koda later about why he thinks he suddenly some sort of that caller. Right now the important thing Finding Les by any means necessary

2/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 O

Chapter Fifty

61%

Axl enter the elevator that leads to the underground holding cells, I smile to myself because I realize Leo has no idea that Draven is no longer carrying his father's

Nope. She's carrying mine. The way that she should be.

Raimer is just finishing cleaning up the blood when I enter and say, 'Change of plan Wake that fucker Marcut up. I need to have a word" Chapter Comments

11

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,176 words]

3/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 D

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Fifty-One

DOMONIC

04 511

The moment Marcus comes to be charges at me and tries in shift. Unlike Doc Vas, I left Marcus unchained, because I just dust find him to be much of a threat. A -becnie he's not a pure shiter, and I doubt he has mastered many of the natural takes as per shifter possess. I-because he's still weak from the tranquilisers we pumped into his and is not at full strength And C-bese him to attack me. The hate I feel for him is so powerful. It beer foto rip him apart if he's not chained to the wall

The idiot stumbles directly into the line of my knife and live for lang path to his right side. As his shift goes awry,

3, his poses fade back into hands and lis fangs retract completely.

Bastard, he hisses from the ground.

grin at him, baring my teeth and licking him in the shoulder as 1 swipe my krule aling his other side. His blood begins to pool on the conne heaves estatically with pain.

I study the man for a moment while he bleeds. He's tall, with a muscular build and head full of black hair and beard to match. The faint lines that power dark amber eyes are the only real signs that he is a day over forty, He's actually not bud looking. But despite his commonly cheming features, I know what he is done - I know what kind of twisted fuck he is inside. So I lick him a couple more time in the stomach, just a piss him off. You know, get his blood pumping a bit.

Did you know that the faster you breathe, the faster your blood pumps out?" I ask him

Hepples. I know who you are," he snaps. "You're that dirty mongrel who stole my mate."

I have to laugh at that. I can't help it. The man is delusional. "Your mate? Really? You slang rapist fuck. First of all, I hiss, "Lab rats don't home mates, Shitters have males. He tries to stand and I kick him again - this time in the face. A loud cracking sound echoes down the hall as the back of his skull meets with the brick of the walls, I kneel in front of him and whisper, "You? Are not a real shaber... and Draven Ifly mate. Not yours. The only connection you will ever have to her again - is through me"

"Like hell," he growls out. "She's mine goddamn it! Her mother give her to me when she was senten

Bullshit, hiss and kick him again.

He curls up and resches Granting and groaning into the dirt of the concrete floor. Hale me all you want, but it's true. Isabella loved me. She didn't want me to be alone after she died. He grins, his teeth coated with blood. "But if I'm being honest-Draven's pay was much better than her mother's and after I had some of it I couldn't touch Isabella ever again."

it him by his throat and knee him in the groin. He goes down in a heap, bent over and blending out.

I lean close to his ear. "Don't worry," I say softly. "I'm not going to kill you today. I'm going to take you apart one piece at a fucking time until your hurt has no choice but to stop beating"

He attempts to grow but it comes out as more of a grunt of pain. "Fuck you!" He spits.

I flash him my dimples and twirl my knife in one hand. "I have some bad news, I play the tip of my knife near his chin and study his gaping wounds. "Your doctor is dead and you don't appear to be healing. Whatever shall you do?" I see him attempt to control his panic as his eyes bulge and he gases down the hill,

chuckle. "He's gone. The moment things got a little rough he sold you and your son put and I set him free by ripping off his goddamn head," I chuckle. "And he was one of us bom skjer. Unlike you"

Marcus yells. "Bullshit! He would never is neck stretches and his mouth falls open wide enough to swallow my dick when he yells, "Van Vas! Can you hear me?"

I laugh, "A man without a head can't hear you. And a cat without a head can't save y Standing up, I step out into the hall and shut the retal bar, kicking him bork inside. He told me about your son About how much he hates you."

1/3

19:52 Wed, Nov 13 00

Chapter Fifty-One

Marcus eyes go wild and again he attempts to shift, but falls. "Fuck you!"

He even told me where Lesi" Te

"Tullshit!" Marcus shouts, "He doesn't even know where Leo ist Only I do." "Really?" I shrug. "So you mean to tell me that Leo dat get here by boat?" ¥51%1

The light fades from his eyes, all anger falling into despair and I kose right then tha kod was right about the host. Now I'm rely wondering who that message

"How? He did-didn't know that! He should know that

Hmm. At least there's one thing this bastard cares about. Even if it's the only thing

grin at him, showing my fangs. "You're right. He shouldst and he didn't. I only suggested it and thanks to you, it's confirmed."

"What?" Marcus snaps, "I never said that!"

I hiss, You didnt have to. Enjoy the rest of your day. See you tomorrow."

"No! Wait!" He shouts as I enter the elevator and press the button to head back up. Wait!!! The doors close against the sound of his bedog and I smile That was almost fun. A great form of stress relief

When I step back onto the first floor, my eyes meet Rainiers "Have someone patch him up. I want to cut him open again monu

Jesus Dom. You re covered in blood Rainier sighs. "Would it be better just to kill the guy quickly? Think of all the man-power he's wasting."

I roll my eyes, "You have somewhere to be?"

"he groans. "I guess not."

Do me a Favor Rainier," I say, thinking about how close we are to finishing this

What a thar?

Give James a call and tell him I said to rehire Margo," I place my hand on the door and prepare to leave, "She can start work again next week" "What?" Rainier snaps. "Why? Didn't she almost cost you your gir

I mod, turning to face him. "Yes. And that's exactly why I need her to come back to work

Rainier huffs, his eyes falling away with disappointment. "You're the boss."

I stepped out into the rain and headed straight for the Hummer, my eyes scanning the landscape and trying to ignore the heavy ache of my heart.

Tomorrow night would be the night of the full moon. If we didn't find Leo by tomar afteman our entire pack was going to have to head to the land. Fuck keeping watch over the bar. It could bum for all I cared. But Draven? There was on why I was going to chance Leo getting anywhere near her.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,172 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Fifty-Two

DOMONIC

515

I race toward the docks at a dangerous speed. Sliding through the rain without any oterm for use or anything on the streets. Once I pull into the parking lot, 1 see Koda outside the main office talking to the dockmaster so I park and head over. There was a boathouse a few nights ago. A real fancy ton, Dockmaster P

Parks is srying as I walk register his vessel. By the time I went outside to get his signature, he was gone. But as ask around and see if any of the boys remember the name of the dama

He stopped and bought some food and fuel. But he didn't thing-causes I don't remember it."

"What did he look like? Koda asks.

The old man squints his eyes, nodding at me in greeting. He was young. Bout twenty. With a scruffy black beard and shoulder length boo Sort of a yellow-brown. He was big too. A little shorter than you Dom, but not by much." The old man sighs, "He didn't tip nobody neither looking. Didn't smile even once."

"Thanks Parks," Koda says, turning toward me. Give me a ring if you spot but whatever you do don't try and detain him."

Is he dangerous?" P

Parks hisses.

I nod. "Yes he is"

"You boy going out in the water?!"

We're pulling out in the powerboat though. Can you tie the yacht up for me?" ask, my attention locking on the fog rolling in and the turbulent waves offshore hinting that the storm is far from over

Course I can. That's what I'm here for. Be careful out there. No one should be out the water bonight."

Thanks for your concern," I tell Parks as Koda and I walk toward pier twelve,

We step slowly, the rain coming down hand mer both of us as we silently scan the train. "Who was that message from Koda? I want to know and I want to know

ΠΟ

Koda shrup, "Quinn.

Quinn. Makes sense. Tell me this," I say, climbing aboard one of the three vessels we have docked. "Are you sure the girl isn't in on anything with Lea? Because you're the one that left her there with Draven. And I swear to God if anything happen to her because of it, I'll kill that bitch.

I watch him carefully as his shoulders sense and he works for control. If I didn't know better, I'd think I just pissed him off. He's so angry, I can see his claws begin to curl out from his hands. What the fuck?

"She isn't in on anything," he growls and I see a flash of fangs before he schools his eatures. His face melting back into indifference, "She's innocent."

I growl at him, my fangs slicing out. "So you say. But, I think I reserve judgement II hear her side of the story. And if she's lying"

"She not," he growls back.

Thead for the control, turning my back on Koda. I feel weight shake the boot and spin around is shock.

To coming with you, he informs, taking a seat.

I laugh. "Fuck if you are. Someone needs to be stationed at the dock to watch for Leo

Tm coming with you," he says again, in a clear, detached voice. "I called Grant. He's ready on his way. He'll keep watch on the docks"

I stare at him for a cool mute before he meets my eyes and what I ser in his gaze looks a whole hell of a lot like defiance. "What's going on with you Koda? There's something you're not tel me. What are you leaving out?!"

1/3

51%

Chapter Fifty-Two

He shrugs, mosing past me to lip the comentible cover closed, shielding un from the rain. "We should get going. Soon we will have a visibility and I want to do a couple of laps around the island before we dock."

I nod, facing back to the control panel and turning the key, "en you on duty?" lure, terring out onto the open weaves and pushing for fall throttle

"I am," he concedes, grabbing the dash as we hit by a particularly nasty swell.

"And you're brushing it off just to protect my mate?" I side-ee him, watching for any shift in his features, but he doesn't so much as twitch.

"Of course. Why else he says, not giving an inch.

But he been doing a whole lot of talking these days, More than he ever han. And starting to wonder why.

BRAVEN

"I can't see shit out of these windows! I say to Emily, my face pressed up against the glass in the living room, I feel like I've been

day waiting for Domene to show back up. But every time I glance toward the wharf is nothing but waves.

"Why don't they have a fireplace here? Wouldn't it be sooo cozy to relax around the ? She comments, studying the brick mantle on one side of the giant flatscreen telev

"Right." I agree. "That is odd. Domonie doesn't have one at his house either." My eyes shoot to where Quinn is busily cutting onions for the new Emily is planning to make.

"Hey QuinnTMTM Yes my queen!"

I laugh. "Is there a fireplace in this house anywhere?"

"Ouch," he snaps, dropping his knife and grabbing for the towel hanging on the wall, what? Hests, wrapping his finger and glaring my way

Oh shit. How's he gonna explain the when it heals in the next five minutes?

you out yourself dufus?" I giggle.

He shakes his head, his eyes falling on Emily. "Nah. It's just a scratch. What were you asking?"

Do you guys have a fireplace here?" I repeat,

His gaze goes dark. "Um nn. But if you're cold I can burn the heat up."

Emily rolls her eyes. No. Not cold. I saw some manhmallows in the pantry and we wanted a fire to mast them over.""

"Well too bad ladies. Fires are no buena. He smiles my way. They're against our religion."

[sort. "What the hell does that mean? Why?"

"Long story," he whispers, going back to his onions.

"Whatever," I sipe. "You know they sell fake ones, right?"

"Do they?" Quinn chimes. "How quaint. Perhaps I will look into that the next time ve a fuck."

I stick my tongue at him and he flips me off.

It is right then that my body goes cold. The familiar feeling of being watched needing over my skin. I freeze, then slowly turn my face back to the window. This time, my gaze is on the woods around the house. I scan the trees, at least, what I can of them. But I get

nothing. No unusual posesient, no visible threat. Still theshners of unese grow stronger. Almost like whatever is out there is smiling my way. I stumble back away from the windows and cud imo the sofa.

My fear must be plain on my face because Emily notices right away Draven? What's ung?

2/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 DO

Chapter Fifty-Two

I clamp my eyes shut, 1-1 don't know just feel

"Draven?" Quinn says, and I feel his hands close over my shoulders, "What is it?"

I open my eyes. "It's nothing. Really. I'm okay. It's just," I sigh. I think there's something in the woods.

Chapter Comments

9

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,457 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 No Maten

Chapter Fifty-Three

DILAVEN

"What?" Quinn snaps. "A

I shake my head no.

bat felt like - like someone was watching de. The sam

at the mods. When you got held

Quinn sight, straightening his hack with

This fogon

(on this idland can get so that wo

"You re probably right,' I comerde, letting go of the beatly I had analized I was bedding

"Of course I'm right,' he quips.

Envily laught, joining him in

se kötchen to atir

That is when we hear it. A shrill unarl, like a feline growed that eroes through the forest outside

51%8

Without asking, I know it's true. He's here. That was him. A panther must be out there in the woods.

My eyes shop to Quinns. His jaw clenches and he grants me a barely perceptible no

"Was that a cat?" Emily gasps. "That sounded like a big, angry at What the hell? Ther tiny island like this one?"

check it out, Quinn says, meeting my cym for a long moment

"Are you crazy?!" Emily screnches. "No way! You can't go out there."

it be possible, can it? I mean how would an animal like that en

"Relax," he tells her, his eyes going heated with her concern for him. There's some ting gear out back. I promise, I'll be fine

Emily hisses, freezing when Quinn puts a finger under her chin and libs her face to plant a quick, soft kiss on her lips.

I swallow my protests, because it's really none of my business, but something about his kissing her rubs me the wrong way I'm not jealous, of course I'm not. However, I can't help but feel like it was wrong somehow. Even Emily herself looks slightly thrown off by the act Libe right back," he soothes her, his eyes glowing. "Whatever happens. Do not come outside. You ladies go upstairs to Demonics room and watch from there. No one can get inside unless you let them in. It's electric entry"

I hod, "Be careful.* *

We lower the blinds on the stove and head upstairs to lock ourselves in Domonic's room. I keep the shades closed until I hear Quinn exit the house, opening them when I feel confident he's had a good minute to shift without being seen. Then, I flip the switch on the shades and sit on the floor next to the window that faces the woods. Watching, nervously as the fog only grows thicker and the rain slams down even harder.

From this high up, I can easily see a good deal of the island and the treetops above the mists. We can't see what's in the trees nor the shoreline behind it and that's what really makes me nervous. Because if Quinn gets hurt, how will we know? Also, the ground surrounding the house is blanketed in a heavy fog so it's a bit difficult to get a visual on anything that might be prowling around the front or back of the house. I'm beginning to feel like we should be downstairs instead. Where

will be obvious what's out there if it approaches the large glass walls.

Now I understand why their homes are practically built from windows. They like to see as coming for them. As wolves, I'm sure, it's a proper defense strategy, but for humans? It's just downright scary.

going to go downstairs for a moment and take a look around the back and front at the house. I can't see any of it from up here." I will Emily

"You're going outside?" She groans.

"No!" I reassure her. "No way. You can't take a look through all the windows on the first floor. Then I'm going to close the shades"

1/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 D

Chapter Fifty-Three

She nods, "Way. I'll be with you,

"No," Lreph, "May here. That way,

thing coming this way from the woods you can shoot at me."

"okay," she says. "That's hurry. I'm getting pretty spooked"

I nod, then slowly make my way down the stairs. With each step I take, my eyes are lined in the windows watching for any kind of disturbance in the mist. Funny, the fog is originally what I loved about this place, but just now it's exactly what I hate. It's a line...

when it comes to those you love.

The moment my bare feet touch the polished floor of the first floor, I feel them. The yes.
My heart begins to pound until it's quivering in

to swallow my fear, telling myself too, but don't wait to

hostage. He just might think he can use me as a bargaining tool.

can't bargain a deal with a loved one, right?

he would need to believe I wouldn't let

So, at least, if he doesn't get to me, I don't think it will be to kill me.

- at least I don't think he does. Then I remember, Domenico

Calm down, Draven, calm down. Deep breaths," I soothe myself, breathing in and out
as slowly as possible.

To my relief, the mantra starts to work its magic and my heart rate begins to slow,

I say to myself, releasing a deep breath. I can do this, I'll be fine.

(turn slowly, my eyes studying all the windows as I do. The dining room is the closest to
the cliff bank and it has the most visibility, so I start there. Combing over what I can see
of the ground. I'm looking for anything. Feet, paws, claws, anything. I gasp, my hand
lying toward

throat

as I edge closer to the window to inspect the mail about a foot away from the wall

I realize, my body going cold.

outside of the window filling with water from the steady pour of rain are three visible
pawprints. Four wide toe marks, and one fat heel. Prints that I recognize anywhere,
because I used to find them in the marshes when Marcus would make me play his
game. (Oh," I squeal. "God"

I'm about to race back upstairs when loud electric pop is heard

is heard throughout the house and each and every light in the place goes dark

Oh no.

The electricity.

tanelerine entry.

Quinn's words, right before he left.

"Holy shit," I breathe.

My brain scrambles as I try to remember something about Les that I should have paid more attention to. Wasn't he staying in something boring as hell back in Florida? But what the fuck was he doing? Something to do with computers.

A plane flies, and I swallow a lump of air before pulling it out.

UNKNOWN-

Hello sin, you've been very naughty.

2/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 DE

Chapter Fifty-Three

"Shit." I tremble. The text jostles my memory. That's right. His main subjects were Software Engineering and Ethical Hacking

My phone pings again

UNKNOWN-

Turn around Draven

DOMONIC

"Is that what I think it is?" I ask as our powerboat comes up against the back of the island. "Open the hatch so we can get a better look

Roda flips the switch and suddenly we are being pelted with rain like bullets to the face. The storm is raging, the sky an unforgiving gray horizon with a crackle of thunder that illuminates a shape against the rocks. Something bobs there, barely visible through the fog. "That's a boat," Roda says with absolute conviction,

The closer we get to it, the easier it is to recognize. I kill the engine. I don't want whomever rode in on the craft to be alerted to our presence. Another bolt of lightning flashes over the side of the vessel, its name shining bright for the tiniest of moments. But, it's enough. "The Isabel," I read out loud and I immediately begin to undress. This is a three

hundred thousand dollar boat," I say as Koda follows my lead, Shedding his uniform and feeding it to the sea. "If we both go well lose it."

Koda simply shrugs and then dives into the water. A growl rips from my chest, but a moment later, I dive in, saying an unceremonious goodbye to the boat and everything on it. When all this is over, he and I are going to have words. Maybe more I'm beginning to wonder if the restructuring of our pack left him confined. It serps, he doesn't remember who the Alpha is

Taking a deep breath as crest over the top of a wave, I dive lower, beneath the swell, Chasing the distance to the island in less than a minute. The second I reach the shore, I don't waste any time. Koda is standing there in his wolf form and in a seconds burst of flesh and bones, I am standing next to him.

My eyes are fixed on a heat signature deep in the trees. What is disturbing is not so much what is there, but where it is. The movement is high up. About fifty feet skyward and traveling swiftly from branch to branch.

Iw right away what it must be and I pull in a breath from the air above me confining it. The scent hits me like a shot of adrenaline.

There's a panther in the woods.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

The Pack Rule Number 1 No Mates - Billionaire One 54

[1,301 words]

Chapter Fifty-Four

DRAVEN

515

Oh my God.

'Driven?' I hear Emily shout down the stair. What's going on?

i

I open my mouth and get ready to scream for her to lock herself in when a muddy hand clamps over my mouth and something hard and wet pushes against my back.

I begin to strangle, a pair of naked rock solid arms come around me from the back and Leo's deep, deadly voice sounds in my ear.

"Uh-uh-uh," he says. "Do not do it. If you do, I'll be upstairs and finish that bitch of Tell her you're fine. Tell her to stay up there the heat of his disgusting breath wafting over the skin of my neck.

I shake my head no and he squeezes me so tight I feel like my ribs are about to crack

Draven Emily's voice again.

Leo chuckles, "No

Leo chuckles, "Now, you have one of two choices. You can come with me willingly? or I can knock you out, kill her, then carry you out to my boat. What's it going to

I nod, I don't really have a choice. I'm just going to wait until we're far enough away from the house then, I stream for Quinn. I know there's nothing else that I can do. I have to do as he says. I have no doubt he'll do exactly as promised if I do. He lifts his hand. "Tim tried to shout, wincing at the shakiness of my voice. "Tim coming back up?" I yell

moans his approval, his tongue gliding over the side of my throat and he places his hand back over my mouth. I have been waiting so long to have you."

He releases me and I think he's going to turn me around, but that's not what happens. Instead, I feel his hands go up under my hair and slide over my neck. Then there's a sharp pain that feels like he just stuck his nail inside of my jugular, and that's it. I crumple into a sea of blackness.

DOMONIC

We are nearly on top of the creature in the trees when it suddenly drops from the sky and lands at our feet shaking the ground with a force that should have told me it was dead weight. I pounce without looking at first, thinking for sure that it's Lee, but I come up short when I hear Koda shout behind me.

"Quinn!" He screams and I spin in the air to switch my trajectory and come up next to Quinn's naked, injured body.

I shift back into myself and lean down toward his face, placing a finger over his throat. I search for a pulse. It's weak, but it's there and I sigh in relief. The copper tinge of blood hits my nostrils and I wince as I realize Quinn was the creature in the. It's still hard to see with all the fog, but I can scent where the blood is coming from and I reach out for his torn, noting a long gash across his abdomen,

"Shit!" For a moment I don't know what to do. "We need to get him in the house!"

Koda nods and the two of us lift him, scanning the trees around us the entire time. When we reach the front porch we realize the electricity has gone out.

to open it in from the inside.

"Son-of-a-bitch!" I scream as I begin pounding on the door, With electricity out, the only way to open

"Open up!" I scream, still pounding on the door.

I don't want to scream Draven's name just at the off chance that Leo doesn't know she's here. Even though I'm positive he does. But hers is not the face that pops up at the bottom of the stain. Instead it is some random girl with pale white-bland hair. "Emily! Open the door Rodi shouts.

She nods, her eyes Baring wide as she takes in the three naked males on the doonte
As she opens the door she cries out, "Quinn??"

We stumble inside and drop Quinn on the couch just as he starts to regain conscious. It
is then that I notice the backdoor is ajar and the smell of panther is Heary in the house. I
spin around my eyes going straight for Emily

1/3

19:53 Wed, Nov 13 OD

Chapter Fifty-Four

Is it coming from her?

"Where's Draven?" She asks. "She was supposed to be on her way back upstairs!
Where

"The back door," Koda hisses. "How the fuck?"

Without another thought I rip across the room and slam Emily against the wall. "What
are you? I hit. Now that I'm next to her, i

over you!"

with what Her hands so straight to where my knuckles are wapped around her throat T I
don't know what you ne "Draven!?" I shout, knowing in my heart and soul that she isn't
in the house. She's not here? And this bitch knows

out.

Emily's pupils dilate and she screams bloody murder, clamoring and struggling, trying to
get out of my grip.

"Let her go Koda snaps, tearing me away from the bitch. She's not one of them."

I glare at Koda. "She smells like one

Roda shakes his head, his body trembling with anger as he presses Emily behind his
back, "Emily, go up to my room and stay there."

is he? Emily cries, clutching at Roda's back.

I grow at her, starling and shoving Koda so hard that his body knocks Emily onto her
ass. "Why does she smell like him

Koda's body tenses, his eyes glowering. But it's not him that answer my question. It's
Quinn

For the same reason Dr Judit en her, Quinn pups out, and my anger for Emily dies a
swift death.

"Fuck, I hiss, my eyes meeting Koda's apologetically

"Yeah," Koda says, with a slight pol

I squint at him quizzically, but then I realize, I do not have the time to be standing
around here trying to figure him out. Draven is not here.

A tremor of fear and lonel

longing so deep that I nearly drop to my knees rips into my throat, pushing me toward
the verge of panic.

"Draven?" I shout and start up the steps to search for her.

Quinn's voor stops me again, as he sits up on the sola. "She's gone!" He yells and I
freeze.

"What?" This racing back down the stairs with inhuman speed and ignoring the
frightened mewls coming from Emily at Koda's back. "How? Whe

"Leo's got her." Quinn Lays, standing slowly. "I saw him. When I was in the trees. He
carrying her to the backside of the right before I fell."

"Leo?" Emily's voice comes out a frightened gasp. "What? You guys know Leo?" She
whimper.

B-I don't hear nor care about anything else as I shift right there in the living room and
are out the back door. Ties and rocks whit patrum Ive ever run in my life. Branches
snapping beneath my heavy paws as I race as close to the shoreline as possible. It
would be faster to gaight trough the trees but not with the fog a thick as it is. The mist is
too heavy for me to travel through this speed. I have to stick to where the trees are
sparse so that I don't rem right into one

I have to get to her now!

If Leo manages to escape with her before I reach the shoreline where his boat was
anchored, we will be monded here without importation. The theme of us have to call one
of the others to pick us up or swim fifty-five miles to the mainland to grab a boat.
Because I highly doute Levri heading back to Port Orchard

catch up with him. manages to get away. No. He'll be heading out to sea. Farther out into the open or where it will be near to impogublé for i

19:53 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Fifty-Four

I'm two miles from where we so the boat docked when I hear his engine start and

I throw my head back and hod as

He's getting away!

heart nearly explodes with fear.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,389 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Fifty-Five

***Trigger Waming - Strong Language and Depictions of Sexual Assault ***

DOMONIC

By the time I reach the shore, the boat is gone. I shift in mid-air and stream helplessly at the sky.

Dom!" Quinn's voice is at my back.

I hardly look at him, my eyes are trained on the fog. I can still hear the boat's engine, so I know they aren't that far from shore. The motherfucking thing and I can't afford to swim in the wrong direction in this storm.

"Are you healed?" I snarl, turning to look at his naked torso

He nods as my eyes study him.

"Where's Koda?" I

"Here" Koda replies, materializing in the fog behind me

Despite the stand off we just had in the packhouse, he still chose to follow me: Good, Maybe I'll forgive his bullshit after all. But I have to wonder if he took the time

to explain anything to Emily before he raced after me. Not that it matters. It's not like she has a way off this land. Who would she tell anyway? Can

Quinn, I hiss. I need you to climb into that tree and see if you can spot the house. With the waves the way they are, he won't be traveling very fast, What

Are you going to do? Quinn snarls.

The only thing I can do," I say. "Swim after them

Quinn nods, burning to race up the priest tree

I'm coming with you, Koda

1. od. "No fucking shit you are."

DRAVEN

I wake up in the bed of Marcus's houseboat. I know it well. He bought it for the bed frame.

alive. My arms are crossed above my head and my wrists are b

belted

I take a deep breath and take in my surroundings. A glance downward tells me that I am still fully dressed - Can I get an Amen? - and the cabin is empty. There are no windows in this room, but I can feel the toss and roll of turbulent water and the heavy grinding sound of this monstrosity's

On God

We've felt the inland. Damn it. Somehow Leo got past Quinn. Or else, Leo killed him. The latter is not a thought I care to accept. Because if he did? And he tells me he did? [I] tear his fucking eyes out with my goddamn toe nails.

Jesus Bill my eyes as I realize I probably will never see Domonic again. How will he find me? How will he know where to look? Why did he have to go to Port Orchard without me today? Why?!?

I hate him so much at this moment that I nearly sob with helpless fury.

Where is that bastard Leo? The con Where is her?

1/3

Chapter Fifty-Five

The cabin door creaks open and the Holl walks right in. "Ah, you're awake. Speak of the damn deal.

"Fuck you!" I shout at him. "You're even

even uglier than I remember."

He chuckles, "And you're even in

more of a bitch, is that because you've been out here in Washington fucking dogs?"

"Probably, I snap Tig

He clicks his tongue,

shaking

50%

head at me with exaggerated disappointment. What happened to the plant little ran from the island?

"She woke up with nothing for you to threaten her with, I tap. Then thinking of Mars, I smile. "Did you know, your daddy's in all-fi granna get what fr deserves

He shrugs, my statement rolling off of him like old skin, Walking further into the o, his beady eyes narrow on well like my father anymore, slut

on me an her sniffs the

1 glare at him, kicking my legs at his fa

face and he bears close. Whatever the fuck thata supposed to mean, firak!"

My chest is heaving with anger as he comes around the side of the bed to stare at I can smell it. A mongrel has been inside of you be hisses, his eyes dashing yellow, and despite my bravado, I tremble with fear. He notices this and grin. "That better. Shot your stupid bitch mouth for a while. You ll he plenty of time to scream and shout when I'm fucking you tonight and tearing up your womb, Or maybe. 111 just have you suck my dik

I shake my head. If you put your worm anywhere near my mouth ll bice it oft

He glares down at me, his hand twitching as his claws are formed. I swallow

my fear and do my best to kick disgusted.

The arms of his t-shirt rip and shred off as his muscles pump tight, enlarging. As he ing? His voice comes out garbled as his neck begins to thicken "Who did you open your legs for, bitch? Which one? Or was it all of them? The rest of his shirt tear and he reaches up with his clawed hand to remove it completely. His chest in heavily pelted with black coils of hair and the muscles of his abdomen are quivering with tension.

"What are you doing?" I whimper.

Leo is taller than his father and quite a bit bulkier. I have n

have no doubt that his panther much the same.

Thick fangs sprout from his mouth, indenting the bottom of his mouth as he growls, a much stronger panther than my father." He smiles, reaching out his hand to place a claw at my throat. Thave more control over my shift than he does. He dips his claw downward, catching it on the collar of my sweater, just above my chest. "Some might even call me a natural. He winks. "Now I asked you a question, asses, tugging sharply on my collar and slicing my peter in half from the neckline down

My chest is heaving, and I try to control my breathing because I can see it turning him on. The look in his eyes seal and I can feel his lust for me with every stroke his game takes across my body.

"Which one of those wolves did you fuck, bitch?" He snarls,

My mind whirls and I try and think up a way to calm him down. If I'm really stuck out here un the ocean with him, then it may be days before Domenic finds me I need to come up with a plan to save myself, I can't let him touch me. I jure to be his victim! Mbele pretend?

"It doesn't matter," I say. "They disgust me as much as your father does."

He chuckles, peeling apart the sides of my top to reveal my naked breasts.

And why

did!! wear a lyu nguw?

Do you really think I believe that? You were there with them. Aep you going to try and make it seem like you weren't acting as their live-in slut?

His eyes catch on ny ripples and his pants bulge, Cross?

"I had nowhere else to go so I made a trade. The feels disgusting on my lips. "Me body, for shelter. I had no choice."

2/3

19.54 Wed, Nov 13 000

Chapter Fifty-Five

staged Draven. I have been watching you and that guy red

old for you. Digning old man. I begged him to let me har

ten I put my hands on you, but not hit. Never bis"

bmit. "But if I'd known you wanted me. I might have stayed" Another like

clenching as he watches me wanly" don't believe you, bath. Don't fucking to

1. c. "My hands are going bumble, closing as I listen you lose the

I tak my place between your legs tight,

remove the belt from your wrists. Im going to wrap in an and your (1 take you." His eyes glaze over and he reaches out his hand again, this time to take one of my breasts in his palm. He squeezes it roughly and i

es of movement, he leaps in close to my face. His fat tongue darting out as he licks the side of my face. Unlike my father, I have no desire

● chin. A weak, trembling, buran bitch"

and clumps over my sex on the outside rips away from me. His mouth is blood

toy pants and he slams his lips on mine, forcing his tongue inside my

mouth. Didn't

n't help me.

I clamped my eyes shut, waiting for the blow that I at least know is coming my way - but instead
Opening them slowly, I look toward where he stands next to the bed.

see sends my stomach rolling. He is stroking the front of his pants with a large sinister grin stretched across his face.

things were lying" he chuckles. "But, that's good" He groans, palming himself with more intensity. I wish it so much more when they fight

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,383 words]

50%

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates.

Chapter Fifty-Six

"Trigger Warning Strong Language and Depictions of Sexual Assault *** DRAVEN

"You know" -Leo croons, unbuttoning his pants and walking toward the cabin room door-"I was going to wait until we were at least a hundred miles from here before

punishing you. But I think now's as good a time as any." He licks his lips and stops at the foot of the bed, his gaze going wildly bright as he stares at me.

"I've never done anything to you!" I hiss. "What do I need to be punished for?"

more

"You mean ether than trying to sever my tongue?" He coos, softly. "For running away, Had you only waited a little longer. Had you only stuck it out, a for weeks. I would have killed my father for you, and you could've been mine." The touch of his eyes seems to reach out with a physical force, creeping over me like a parade of imects. I resist the urge to cry out as he drops his pants and exposes himself to me. I don't shut my eyes. I can't. I have to be aware of every little move he makes. If I let him see how scared I am it will only spur him on. So instead, I keep my eyes open, my game steady. Trying like hell to keep my body from trembling as he begins to stroke the thick length of his sex.

"Don't look at me The that Draven. I know you think I hate you, but I do not." He chuckles. "Pretending you're not afraid of me won't get you anywhere," he grina. "Because, you see? I've known you since you were twelve years old and I know you're afraid. You are terrified. Nor do you want me. So act any way you like. Smile, moin, groan, freeze up. It won't matter." He pauses to lick his lips before reaching out and whipping my pants of 'I know how much you're going to hate having me inside of you and that will be more than enough to keep me going Again he licks his lips, his eyes dancing from my exposed breasts to the curve of my hips, then hack again. "You are so damn perfect. I cannot wait to break your

I grit my teeth, struggling against the bonds on my wrists. Do him?

He steps all the way out of his pants, climbing onto the bed completely naked and wapping his hands around each of my ankles. "You see, I've noticed something out bitches like you, and sluts like Emily. Bom beautiful, thinking you're free to go cheer you please. Do whomever you please. You seem to think you're the good to belong to any one man. As if you actually should have a choice in how you're treated. In what happens to you. But you're wrong. Culs like you, are only good for one thing." He meets my eyes. "Fucking"

I can't help it, I shiver a bit at the evil I see there. His gaze appears the same as it always has in the past-yet his words have given that look meating as to where before, there was only hate. Now? Is so much more than that. Now I see the venom of what he believes. He doesn't at hate me he hates everyone that isn't him.

He laughs. "I know what you always thought of me. You thought I was weak. Well, surprise, surprise. I'm not. My father is the weak one. Unlike him, I have sell control

I resist the urge to snicker at that. Instead I concentrate on the sound of the boat's engine and the rolling of the ocean against the hull. The thunder outside-the pelting of

rain Anything else but him. If I'm going to get through this - I have to form my mind elsewhere, because I'll be damned if this bastard gets the satisfaction of my tears.

He spreads my legs, his eyes falling on my red thong as his fangs creep all the way out. Arching almost completely over his chin like a saber tooth tiger's would.

He smiles, taking a deep breath. "The scent of that mutt is everywhere. I'll have to fuck it out of you." He lets loose with a feral hiss. "My scent will fit you perfectly and if I decide to keep you, I will never allow it to die out

+

"Fuck you," growl, wiggling again in an attempt to test his grip.

"Stop that shit or I'm going to make things a bit more painful. Maybe break your jaw or crack a rib. Whatever brings the fear back to your eyes. All for my pleasure." He giggles. "The more frightened they are, the more I enjoy them."

Obviously Emily wasn't his first victim, and for a moment, my heart goes out to any other woman that came before me. Even poor Michael who truly believed he and Leo were in love. I realize right then, it may be impossible for me to be rescued. If I want to live, I'll have to think of some way to get him to unbell my wrists. I glance around, searching for anything I can use should I get free. My eyes graze over the nightstands on each side of me, then toward the shelf above the dresser on "my right. Nothing, nada, rip, zich. It seems as if Leos cleaned this room of everything save the bed. There isn't even a pencil on the writing desk, nor a coat hanger

in the closet. I know one thing is for sure, if he manages to touch me with his dick I'll take the damn thing off I don't care if I have to use my teeth. It seems what's about to happen is just going to have to happen. I will endure. Bide my time then get him when the time is right.

"I have to pre. Can I per first? Lane - but worth a shot

He laughs heartily, his hairy chest shaking!

with glee. "If you must pee, then pee. I don't mind. I'll take whatever you give me."

1/2

Chapter Fifty-Six

I try to kick my ankles out of his grips but he only lightens his hold on them. He begs to climb up my body and I try to buck upward, only for him to groan and drop his weight fully between my legs. He moans, his mouth finding my throat and socking viciously as he teaches down in position himself at my entrance.

"This is going to feel so good," he hisses, biting my earlobe hard enough to draw blood.

I scream, despite my internal vow not to and his body tenses, writhing over mine,

No please not

My heart is thumping. Shaking my chest and the entire bed with it. I'm panting and pining for breath as his disgusting hands slide everywhere over my body, his mouth locks on my throat as he slides my thing to the side. "Wait! Wait! Please wait! I scream, bucking my hips to keep him from getting inside of me

I kick my legs wildly and somehow manage to knee him in the stomach. He growls, getting up and glaring down at me before eating his arm back to smack me across the face.

My vision ashes out for a second and I taste blood. My cheek feels like an explosion of flesh and bone, but still, I do not cry. I will not cry

But, I do go limp and I feel his smile against my neck. "Much better, he hisses, groping my ear

I close my eyes. I don't want to see his face when he enters me. I refuse to allow him to look in my eyes.

Again I feel him position himself at my entrance. He lifts his hips, rolling them back and grinding against my sex.

"I'm going to split you in half bitch," he says, "Over and over again until you're dead.

I feel the head of his dick as it parts my folds and I ready myself, relaxing my muscles I tune into the sounds of the storm once again.

Thunder roars and I swear it shakes the boat. The sound of rain is much louder now, the splash of the waves, more pronounced. Every sound seems amplified. But something is missing though. Something has changed. My eyes fly open as I realize.

The boat's engine.

...it's just been shut off

Chapter Comments

POST COMMENT NOW

8

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,408 words]

DRAVEN

A low and deadly growl climbs about the room. A sound so deep and terrifying I fought for a moment, who the enemy is. I gasp as Leo freezes above me, his eyes flashing, yellow and Mark then veining into a color I've only seen in the eyes of a panther, I whimper, struggling once again as he turns. A dark black wolf stands in the doorway, his lips down back, fangs glaring in the light. One look into the wolf's blue eyes and I know it must be a Thank God

Leo leaps into the air and I scream as claws scratch me with the movement. It all poses in a blur-Les trying to change mid-fight as he spins to face Roda and Koda mapping his jaws in invitation. That's when I notice Koda is not alone. There's another wolf on my left side one that must have crept in while Leo was on top of me. It leaps at Les back. This wolf is red brown and incredibly familiar.

He is the wolf I saw outside of Domonic's house some nights and he is larger than any animal I've ever seen up close. Even larger than Marcus' panther.

He a D

know this in the depth of my soul and I swallow back a sob as Leo is caught off guard by Domonic's jaws closing over the back of his neck. Blood sprays, hitting me in the face, as Leo's body is thrown to the floor on the left side of the bed. He is still mid-shift and now he is bleeding. A gaping wound pours from his neck. Blood soaks the floor around him as he shudders. Laughing, somewhat angrily he attempts to spit but fails. The two wolves gather around him, circling him slowly, growling and snapping their teeth as they do. It's a sight that brings my legs up beneath me and my back against the headboard. My arms are bent at an uncomfortable angle, but I don't feel it. I'm mesmerized and I can't look away.

The wolves are

are just so be

so beautiful.

They talk around Leo with predatory grace and for once, Leo has the good sense to be scared.

He is parting, his body trembling as his eyes attempt to track the wolves. But I see it in his eyes. He knows the fight is over and I almost smile, "My father will-" Leo starts to say, but he never gets to finish.

Domonic's wolf charges forward, tearing into Leo's face and his words are swallowed in a flurry of sharp teeth. Koda leaps in at the front and rips open Lebowels with his claws. Digging him out with his paws. Pieces of flesh and organ splatter the floor in a circle, growing wider and wider as the seconds tick by. The room is a chorus of sharks and growls as the wolves tear him apart and I watch with gruesome fascination, unable to turn my head from the execution in front of me. It feels like it takes forever, but I know it has only been moments by the time Leo is naught in a fountain of blood. Not an ounce of flesh is left of who he was. The last thing I see is Domonic's teeth go around what must be Leo's throat before he snaps his jaws tight and an eerie crack reverberates through the room, Leo's mangled head rolling off his neck.

Again, I black out DOMONIC

After scooping all that remained of Leo into open plastic bags, Rods and I decide to give the camiones of the ocean a retreat. I doubt they often get to taste panther. It is still pouring rain and as we dump his leftovers into the sea and a blood washes from our bodies and onto the deck

Draven is sleeping inside. I unbound her wrists and cleaned her up while God we got here in time. Had we been even a minute later...

well, we weren't. So I choose not to picture that.

rested. My body tightened with rage each and every time I looked at her face. Thank

I thought about letting Draven decide what to do with this houseboat, but then I realized, it was probably best if we let it capsize at sea. By the time we get back to the island, reinforcements should be there with another boat. We'll take care of the ghiblem while the storm is still healthy and let the chips fall where they may. There's a very minimal chance that Draven might get upset when she finds out, but cely because the vessel is named after her mother. And if that is the case, I have a solution. I'll just buy her a different boat, name that one after her mom, and be done with it. Despite what I know about who Draven's mother was before she died. I'm not going to sour Draven's memory of her mother by telling her what Marcus said I would only become another one of those things that she would have to survive. Let the woman's treachery die with her husband. Because the first thing I'm going to do when I get back to Port Orchard is rip that fucker Marcus to shreds.

As I stare out at the crashing waves I tell Koda, "We need a plan for tomorrow night

Chapter Fifty-Seven

He nods, not saying anything.

"I think both Emily and Draven should stay on the island until after the Full Moon going to ask Gryffin to help us. To send someone to watch over them during the night." He chuckles. "Sounds like you're breaking the rules wonin."

I glare. I am. I know I am. I've already broken so many I've lost count. "This is the lake."

His eyes snap to mine, his mouth tight, "After all this. You're still going to send her any. He shakes his head in disbelief.

I glare back at him and for the first time I see something that looks like panic in his not the time to explore it. "You know I am." I sigh. Thave to. I never want to feel like tures. What the fuck indof? Something is going on with him. But now's felt today, ever again."

He nods, taming back to the ocean. "So you plan to watch over her from here?"

"Of course," I admit. Tve already bought her a condo in Miami and set up an account for her there as well. I figure she can finally go home now,"

Koda shakes his head. "You really think it will be that easy for you?" He laughs. "Do you remember the way it was for our dads? The pain they felt without-

"I remember," I snap. "But they were bonded. Draven and I are not. It shouldn't be as painful. And if it is it's worth it just to keep her safe

As I walk toward the cabin entrance Koda's voice calls out to me

"What if we could find the arsonist from all those yours ago?"

Ite, glancing over my shoulder at him when I speak "What if we coul!?"

"Then - would you consider letting her stay?"

Now, I turn around. "Are you sporting a hard on for my mate Koda? Because that is sur as fuck what it sounds like

He laughs, the bastard, as if just the thought of it is funny. "No," he says. "Definitely not."

"No? Are you sure about that?! I snap

He glowers at me. "Im sure," he hisses. Just drop it. Forget I said anything."

I growl, "No, I won't! You've been doing a lot of that shit! What I do with my wote is up to me. You got it?"

His eyes go cold as he glares at me. "What sate, Demonic? We don't get to have the remember? So she's not your mate! And once she's gone? She won't be your girl anymore either." That's all it takes, just that one stupid comment. I snap, lunging for him and getting in his face.

"That's enough," I snarl. To my surprise, Koda doesn't back down. He's glaring right back at me, and the way his chest is heaving, I can tell he's working for control. This Jucker wants to hit me! "You trying to challenge me for something Koda? Because can always do this tomorrow night."

To the death?" He snarls

I grin. "Is there any other way?"

He deflates, his body going slack. Then no. I don't want to challenge you. But when the time comes- and you're desperate to have her back. Just remember, you did it to yourself

2/3

The Pack: Rule Number 1- No Males

Chapter Fifty-Eight

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,698 words]

2/3

The Pack: Rule Number 1- No Males

Chapter Fifty-Eight DOMONIC

We arrive at Bol Woll Island and I terapi Boven's vivonsinus body in the sheet from die bed and rare her into the house, Grant, lief, and Bartlett are scattered around the firing psom when Leuter, but I cant see Emily anyudere. However, bem kell her panther Islated scrot coming from Roda's room, and her sobbing can be heal thuyugh the door. Liptore rach set of eyes that lands on me as I take the sales ton at a time beker shutting myself in my room with the treasure in my

I lay her down gently, my hand combing over her brow, She leans a few inches over her shoulders and the right side of her face is so close that my heart pounds with pain.

"Fuck," I hiss through clenched teeth.

It was so close

was so close So close! Leo almost

"Demonic" Dusen's voice breathes out as her eyes flutter open.

"Baby," I lean forward, pressing her back down in the bed when she tries to sit up. "Take a rest," I say, taking a seat on the bed and kissing her lips softly. "It's okay, I've PUL YOU BARU

She smiles at me, her eyes filling with tears, "I saw you" she whispers, "And I wasn't hard. Not of you." She reaches up, placing a warm hand on the side of my face. "You were amazing."

How can she think that? How can she look at me like that? After what she just did to me do the brutality of it. The savagery.

Fuck. I close my eyes, turning away from her to walk toward the restroom and fetch water.

Those words - they felt so good to hear. My heart aches anew when I think about when I first met her. I was so sure she'd be disgusted by me. I was positive that once she found out what we were, she would hate us. But she doesn't.

I don't want to send her away. I want to keep her here. With me. Maybe Roda is right. Maybe I am being an idiot in thinking that I'll be able to live my life away from hers. I've been blocking out the thought of what will happen when she meets someone else. Maybe someone else. Has their babies!!!!

I turn on the faucet and then clutch the countertop as tightly as I can with me.

I'm Pushing away

the anger that is suddenly overriding the joy of her being alive and back here

"Domenic?" She calls out.

"One second," I say, soaking one hand towel completely with water.

Shutting off the faucet I step back into the room and stop short. Draven is standing there completely naked.

God she's beautiful. But the bruises are returning. As my eyes roam over her battered body, rage surges up my throat.

She steps toward me slowly and I can't look away. My gaze falls on her throat zeroing in on that special spot that thrums just for me. The urge so bond her thickens my dick the closer she gets to where I stand. Why a

I still maked??!

I have to get out of here.

I close my eyes and tummy head as she stops right in front of me to place two hands upon my pounding chest. "Look at me," she whispers. "Please."

My body shudders as her palms slide upward and over my shoulders. "I can't," I hiss.

"Why?" She chokes out, dropping her hands. "He didn't get me. I promise. He tried to but you-"

"Hey!" I soothe, opening my eyes to see that she is crying. Fuck, I mess everything? Does she really think I would hold it against her even if he did? I pull

her into my arms, my inconveniently timed erection pressing into her stomach. "Hush. Please. I'm not upset with you. Don't be ridiculous." She trembles against me

1/4

Chapter Fifty-Eight

Her ear warm my best. "Tally close to the full moon and everytime I look at your bruises I want to say something

mumbles. I keep hearing that tell me, what exactly happen on the full moon?

Ignoring her question, I lift her into my arms and carry her bridal style into the bathroom, then gingerly set her naked ass on the counter

Stepping toward the bathtubs, I turn on the water to start a hot bath complete with salts and bubbles for her to soak in

Demon she scolds. "I asked you a question and you are going to answer me.

I grin, noting the fire in her emerald gaze and the stern cross of her arms over her perfect chest. Thank God she lost any of that attitude. God I'm going to miss that if she leaves

Domanic Brady? Okay, so maybe somewhere in my head I am playing with the idea of changing the rules to keep her around. I shouldn't be, but I'd be lying if I

"Every month on the night of the full moon I say, my hands stroking up her thighs to cup her biya. "We, as wolves, are forced into a shift from dusk to dawn. All of our animal senses are implified and we are practically inhuman" Helden. "What ctly does that

at meant

I shrug: "We know who we are, but at the same time, we don't

Tvery month?" She

"So what you're saying is when it gets closer to the full moon, your emotions="

Age explosive: Yes I nod "uncontrollable, also-yes-I lift her off of the counter- unpredictable, yes. I place her in the water and smile when she moar with

So you're basically rabid, is what you're telling me," she smirks, eyeing my dick

I chuckle. "Exactly."

sex would be crazy?" She teases, biting her lip.

Holy shit, yes it would be

"Don't do that," I choke out, my voice husky. The tops of her breasts are still visible above the bubbles and my mouth is watering at the sight. The way I'm feeling right now? I'd break you for sure."

She sighs, Iraning back into the water and rolling her eyes. "Whatever. Chicken."

1 chuckle, turning away from her so that my dick doesn't get any ideas. Exiting the bathroom, I leave the door open and pull on a clean pair of boxers and jeans. Then I throw on a sweatshirt and tie on ny boots. "What are you doing out there?" She yells.

Preking in on her from the bedroom, I smile. Thave to go and get a few things from the house."

glares and for a moment, the domesticity of it warming my chest. Hatching all kinds of emotions I was never planning to have.

I stare at her, try throat slowly closing as I imagine coming home to her like this, every single day,

Ill be back soon, I HE

ait," she yells, her eyes suddenly heavy inud, fighting the urge to stay right here and join her in the tub. "Thank you," she whispers.

Fuck. I stalk toward her then kneel next to the tub to lean in and take her soft lips into my own. I shove my tongue deep, my hand reaching behind her head to anchor her as I claim her mouth. "When I get back," I hiss. "You can thank me all you want." She smiles, panting an I

Taway. "Promise?"

2/4

19:55 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Fifty-Eight

Her eyes are heavy and I'm hard as stone in my pants knowing that she is wet and led beneath all these bubbles,

I Promise," I whisper.

And I mean that.

The moment I step out of my room I ran into Imily.

The

She jerks, scrambling backward at the sight of me. Her eyes are red, puffy, and filled with termot.

"What the fuck do you want?" I snap.

Her eyes dart toward the ground. "I wanted to see Draven. To make sure that she's car

"She's in the bath. I don't think she'd mind seeing you," I say, opening the door for her.

"Go on." She nods, stepping:

past me so carefully I almost growl just to watch her jump.

"Thank you," she says.

Take care of her for me," I say and she gasps in surprise. "She needs to rest."

Nodding, she

closes my

door and I turn back around to find Koda fully dressed and glaring at me from his bedroom doorway

's time to put an end to all panthers in the Northwest

"I'm heading to the mainland," I say. "It's t

He nods stiffly. Tim coming with you"

"Why's that?" I mumble, not really giving a damn as we head down the stairs

"Apparently you haven't spoken to Bartlett yet."

I haven't, but he's here, so the moment I hit the first floor landing I turn his way. "What happened?"

Bartlett's eyes are dark with anger. "Goose came by the bar earlier. He was pissed about the doctor."

I shrug, "So what. He'll get over it"

Bartlett shakes his head no. "I don't think he will."

I chuckle. "And why's that?"

Turtlett

crosses his arms. "Because apparently-Gryffin can't shift. His lion... It's gone

""What

the..

Chapter Fifty-Eight

Her eyes are heavy and I'm hand as stone in my pants knowing that she is wel

"I Promise," I whisper.

And I mean that.

The moment I step out of my room I run into Emily.

She jerks, scrambling backward at the sight of me. Her eyes are red, puffy, and filled with terror.

"What the fuck do you want?" I snap-

Her eyes dart toward the ground. "I wanted to see Draven. To make sure that she's okay?"

"She's in the bath. I don't think she'd mind seeing you," I say, opening the door for "Go on."

She nods, stepping past me so carefully I almost growl just to watch her jump.

"Thank you," she says.

"Take care of her for me," I say and she gasps in surprise. "She needs to rest."

Nodding, she closes my door and I turn back around to find Koda fully dressed and glaring at me from his bedroom doorway

"I'm heading to the mainland," I say. "It's time to put an end to all panthers in the Northwest."

He nods stiffly. "I'm coming with you."

"Why's that?" I mumble, not really giving a damn as we head down the stairs.

"Apparently you haven't spoken to Bartlett yet."

I haven't, but he's here, so the moment I hit the first floor Landing I turn his way. "What happened?"

Bartlett's eyes are dark with anger. "Goose came by the bar earlier. He was pissed about the doctor."

I shrug. "So what. He'll get over it"

Bartlett shakes his head no. "I don't think he will."

I chuckle, "And why's that?"

Bartlett crosses his arms. "Because apparently Gryffin can't shift. His lion... it's gone

[1,708 words]

Chapter Fifty-Nine

DRAVEN

Draven Emily a voice calls to me from the bathroom doorway and I jerk upright. "Emily," Tamile, glancing her way: "Come in"

"Oh my God," she cries out, stepping inside and taking a good look at my face.

Shit. I must look like hell

"I'm alright," Lassurance her, dipping my head under the water for a cool moment before strength of her muted subbing. "Hey!" I stand up, pulling the drain when I do, then and pull her into a bug theokay, really, I'm fine. I've had way worse."

coming back up. When I do, she is in trans. Her body shaking i

ring for a clean towel on the rack. After wrapping myself

And that the truth. What Marcus used to do to me was a hundred times worse than slut happened today.

"I cant believe you" she whispers, pulling away. Her dark eyes are filled with wonder when the looks at me. "How are you so strong?"

I shrug: I don't consider myself strong at all. "I'm not

"You are!" She argues as we saunter into Domonic's room.

g" I tarp. "You are. I didn't get dumped into the ocean after being assaulted and to be honest if I had I probably would have chosen to sink

Sadly, I speak the truth. The first time Marcus assaulted me, that's exactly what I tried to do, I took a gun out of his closet and pressed it to my head. I even pulled the trigger. Luckily, the damn thing wasn't loaded. Whew. Every time I look back on that day, all I feel is weak. So I push it down, where I store most of m and I bury it beneath mountains of bulshit.

Su no, I am not strong. The first time I faced any of my past was when I spoke to Domonic about it. Before that? I was good with the avoidance technique. though? Not so much.

"I don't believe that," she sighs, but a hint of a smile plays over her mouth.

I walk over to Demonic's dresser and pull out a pair of his pajama pants and a plain witte t-shirt. This is all I've have to wear until he gets back, I puetz. It will do. Watching Emily while I get dressed, I notice she is pacing the room. Shooting strange looks at me every time she makes a pass.

"What is it?" I ask, sensing there is more than just my bruises on her mind.

"I don't know if I should tell you," she says, growing more and more nervous. Her followers and she continues to pace. "I don't even know if I believe it

"What?" I cue, thinking I more than likely know what she's about to say.

She must have witnessed one of the guys change when they went after me. The way she rps glancing toward the door like it might burst open, tells me sherafiled of someone in the house.

I saw your boyfriend do something. She huffs, dropping into the velvet armchair against the wall and burying her face in her hands. Something horrible. And I don't know if I should tell you about it or not. You'll probably think I'm nuts."

Uh-oh. My eyes narrow, and I take a seat across from her on the bed. "Something horrible?" I repeat. Are you sure it was horrible?"

She nods, lifting her head. Her eyes flare wide. "So horrible."

Fachool my features, trying to remain calm. A deeper part of me wants to snap at her but I know she's just ignorant, so I don't. "Uh-huh, What makes it horrible? The fact that he can sit into a wolf, or the fact that you can't?"

"What? What does that mean?" She gasps, her back straightening. "You already know about him?"

1/4

Chapter Fifty-Nine

18-a wolf 1-ton?"

Her eyes grow frightened and she swallows loudly. "X-are you a

I shake my head. "No"

Oh thank God?" She hisses, her eyes flying around frantically. "We need to get out of her

"No, we do. We're safe here.

"Wh-what?" She stamnen. "How can you think that?"

"I don't think that, I know that." I place my hands on her shoulders and meet her eyes. "Like I said, I'm not a wolf, but I wish I was

Her eyes bulge. "Why the fuck would you wish for that?"

"Because if I was a wolf, Marcas and Leo would have been dead long ago." I sigh, suppressing the urge to shake her. I don't like the way she's handling this. No one here has tried to hurt her. Not once. At least I don't think they did. Either way, her ignorance is getting on my nerves. "'Who is Mares?" She inquires softly

"Leo's father. The devil," I say smoothly, remembering that Domonic still has him on jockdown. Then, I try a different approach. "Would you hate me if you found out that I was a wolf? Would you think I was... horribir?"

She shakes her head frantically. "No! No way!

I glare "Then why would you call Domonic horrible? Because we got news for you, he's not the only wolf

"He fucking growled at me!" She shrieks, her hands flying about her head wildly. "He was going to bite me!"

I bite my lip, trying not to smile. "What? When?"

"When they came in and found that you were gone. He attacked met

I shake my head. "No. He never would have done that."

She begins to cry again, softly sobbing as she rocks herself. "Yes. He would: He definitely tried to, but Roda stopped him."

Koda stopped him, eh? I roll my eyes. "Koda, the hero," I snipe, showing some of my nation. It's on the tip of my tongue to tell her that Koda is a big bad wood too, but I don't. Not my secret to tell. Is that all you saw? Just Domonic changing into a wolf?"

"Is that not enough?" She snaps, her voice rising incredulously. "I tell you he's a werewolf? A monster! And you want to know if that's the only thing???"

"He's not a monster!" I hiss, getting angry "And don't you dare fucking call him on

She hiccups, retreating into herself. "1-I'm sorry I just-"

"Stop!" I growl out, standing up. "I like you Emily. I do. And we have a whole hell of a lot to talk about. But do not catch yourself talking about Demonic that way again, or we're going to have a very big problem - you and me. Understand?"

Emily begins wringing the front of her sweater with her hands like she might have a panic attack and I have to fight the urge to laugh. She nods, "O-okay."

But I can tell that it's not and I berate myself for being so callous. Shit. Not everyone has had the chance to learn the difference the way that I have. I need to have a bit more

compassion for her. I mean, I reacted the same way when I first found out what Marcus was. Then again, Marcus is a monster, and the things he did to me were criminal

"Quamanic probably lashed out at her because I'd been taken.

I sigh, reaching for her hand. Surprisingly, she takes it. "Come on. Let's go downstairs. Have you had a chance to try that stew you made?"

She shakes her head. "No. When papa went after Domonic, he told me to lock myself in my room and that's exactly what I did."

2/4

Chapter Fifty-Nine

I nod, good. "What did Koda tell you then we got back?" Lask

trembles, shaking her head as tears fill her eyes once more. It doesn't matter. Let's go eat

A mile, rattled for a moment of what might have happened between them. It's none of my business, I know this. Still, I can't help but wonder

DOMONIC

I stride into the Putt Orchard Sheriff Station to find Gryffin and Goose there waiting. I'm only mildly surprised after what Koda told me back on the island. But the haunting look that Gryffin gives me shakes me to the core.

He looks physically ill. His normally golden skin is a muted shade, tinged with gray. His eyes are cupped with dark shadows and the golden light that normally fires

He looks drained.

"Jesus Christ," I hiss and he no

"I need to know what he took from me," Gryffin rasps, his eyes wet. "And I need to get it back."

I swallow, working my jaw. "Well, let's go and see what we can find out." I turn toward Hainier, who I know has been here for thirty-six straight hours. "When's the last time you thicked on that bastard?"

He puts the chains on him and

after Lagan stitched him up, Rainier says. "That was the last I saw him."

"Wheres Timmons?" I ask, glancing around at the empty station. Rainier has had all the human deputies on patrol since the night we brought the panthers in Not that they would have seen anything anyhow. The only people who have access to the dungeons of the basement are the members of our pack and there are absolutely no canetas down these.

I sent him home to get some rest hours ago Rainier says, rubbing his eyes.

I nod, my eyes falling over the bon shifters who are anxiously waiting next to the elevators. I'm going to have to give them Marcus. I can't risk having him here with no one to watch over him. All of us wolves need to sleep before tomorrow night or will be too weak to fight our animal urges.

Gore, Gryffin, and I enter the elevators and I punch in the access coder that allow below.

The moment ser step out onto the dungeon floor, the sharp tang of cupper floods my ses. The rank smell of fresh blood is heavy in the air.

"What the fuck?" I hiss, my Fangs slicing out. The eerie silence of the space is deafening and a feeling of foreboding washes over me with the darkness of the hall.

Why are the lights out?"

I hold up my hand, simaling that Gryffin should stay back while Coose and I creep further in. The concrete floor appears shiny and it takes me a full minute to understand why. Woven in blood

facing down the hall I grow as I approach Marcus' cell. It's open and rage ignites iroide me as

as I realize what I'm looking at.

Manicus is still there. Right where Rainier left him. Still chained to the wall

But he's missing his head. And on the brick wall behind him in giant block lettering is a message written in blood.

A message that reads... NO MATES.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter

Sixty

As Emily and I come down the stairs the unmistakable sound of two people arguing the
up the ball. I can hear multiple voices shouting profanities that bounce off the glass walls
to rest between my ears, triggering a sense of urgency in me that ignites something in
maternal instinct in my blood.

The

ding? I ask, glancing back at Emily before running down the landing steps to come to a
screaming halt inside the living room

Quinn on his back and Roda on top of him slamming his fist

Quinn's face. Bart, Grant, and Lief are standing back and watching like

things idiots. Why aren't they stopping this? Fury ages inside of me at the sight. This is
not right. This has to stop

The wave of fear that falls from Emily's lips is what does it for me.

I shout so loudly the sound rings through my ears. "Stop

that NOW!

To my surprise

● of them Eierses. Even Koda whose rig is in mid-swing-stops to stumble back and away
from Quinn on the ground

"Base racks into a grande ashtray toward me, his arms open for a hug

I hold my hand out, stopping him mid-stride

pping over broken pieces of the coffee table, I make my way toward

at the center of this circus

Cueto tell me what the fuck is going on here? Is "Since when are you both solo?"

Koda is seething, but he says nothing as he exits the room, storming out the back door
and into the storm

"Where the hell is he going?" I scap.

Quinn, his lips bloody and his face all as my own, glares at me from the ground. "Just a little brotherly love, my queen"

"Seriouly?" I hiss. "You better get up to your room and stay there so that you don't have to explain yourself yes again," I say, throwing my head back in a gesture toward Emily

"Right," he says softly before lifting himself effortlessly off the floor and onto the

"Draven" Bart's voice sounds behind me and I finally turn around so that he can envelope me in his arms. I'm so glad you're okay. I wish I had been allowed to deal with the bastard myself. But, you know how it is.' I chuckle. I don't actually, but I'm learning."

"You certainly took charge of their little boxing match li

Luna should," Limbles and eye him warily.

"Yes she did," Grant says with approval, his smile widening as he bows.

"Okay," I say somewhat quizzically, my gaze traveling over the room. "Should I ask what they were Eching about or do I even want to know?"

"NodeLief states and taking a seat on the sofa and searching for the remote control for the flatscreen

"Uh-uh, no," I say, swatting him on the back of his head. "You guys are going to get this mess up first and Emily and I are going to set the table and serve the stew

"Teily" Grant says, his dark twinkling. So nice to meet you. You are lovely."

I grin at Emily, but I notice she's hardly paying attention. Her eyes seem fixed on the backdoor, her hand stuck at least I think in the wood that walked out of it DOMONIC

1/3

Chapter Sixty

By the time I make it back to the island it's well after midnight. One glance up toward the house on the hill and I know Draven is still awake. My bedroom light is on and two feminine shadows play over the shades. I smile to myself as I realize I know tactly which one is Draven and which one is Emily.

Draven's not only curvier than the blond, but there isn't a world out there in which wouldn't recognize the sexy the yacht. I'm getting hard. way the m

moves. Just watching from down here on

Luckily the storm let up an hour ago. Right at the same moment that Gryffin and I come to an express understanding. I gave him the information I had on the good doctor and Marcus and he allowed me to recruit Tadoes for guard duty tomorrow night. She could be arriving by boat tomorrow afternoon and would remain on the island to watch over the girls while the rest of us went back to Port Orchard for the night.

It isn't until I climb from the yacht that I realize Koda is sitting at the edge of the wharf, a lit cigarette in his mouth as he stares hauntingly out into the ocean.

"Did you get my message?" I ask. Referring to the group text I sent to all pack members save for him. His old phone and my old phone were lost at sea with our three-hundred-thousand dollar powerboat. The moment I picked up a new phone I sent out the text. He nods. "Grant told me. Did you bring me a new phone?"

"Yup," I say, tossing the device to him over my shoulder as I tie up the boat. "I heard you got into with Quinn," I remark, coming to stand behind him, my eyes scanning the open water. The waves are calm. Not even a wisp of fog remains. Strange, but preferable. "Care to tell me why?"

He doesn't answer me, which says enough. He doesn't want to talk about it and I don't particularly feel like prying tonight. Not after everything that happened back

at the station.

"Draven asked Bartlett to hire Emily at the bar," he says softly, taking another hit of his cigarette.

"Shit," [hiss. "What did Bartlett say? No, I hope."

Koda chuckles. "He can't tell Draven "no- any more than you can."

I start to argue, then I realize, what's the point. He may be right. But my plan is to make sure she doesn't ask to stay. My plan is to make her want to leave. "She has to go," I whisper. "You know she does."

He nods. "Yeah. I know." Then, "Did you smell anything different in the dungeon?"

I shake my head no, still confused about that fact. "Where are you going to sleep tonight? Are you going to give Emily your room!"

Again he nods. "I'll take the couch."

I head toward the house slowly, my mind struggling with what I'm going to have to do to get Deaven to leave. As far as I know, she doesn't realize that she's my mate. She doesn't even know what a mate is and I need to keep it that way, But tonight, I'm going

to lay with her one last time and try to burn the memory of the way it feels to hold her into the flesh of my arms.

If you mark her, she'll heal faster and be stronger.

I huff at that thought as I enter the dark space of the living room. Marking her would do a number of things for her as well as for me. It would bond us. Essentially marrying us in the eyes of all shifters. Any wolf that encountered her after, would know she belonged to an Alpha. It would also alter her chemical make-up. Making her human body stronger, faster... more dazzling. If that last part is even possible. She's pretty fucking incredible already. My mark would also let me know the moment she was in danger. It would grant me a sort of sixth sense for what she was feeling. I would know if she were sick, or God forbid, if she were dying

It might keep her that much safer after she leaves.

It won't track her, but I already know where she'll be because I've already arranged a Haze for her to live. Besides, she carries my scent and in theory, it should carry for up to fifty miles. So should I ever want to see her. I'll just fly to Miami, track her scent, and watch her from afar

Just that thought is depressing enough to crush into my chest like a knife twisting of the inside of me.

The trick will be getting her to accept the condo as a gift after I push her out. But I have a plan for that too

But the pain that I would experience, at our being apart, would increase tenfold. Or so I've heard.

But my pain doesn't matter. I can live through it. I have to, right? The main thing to get her as far from here as I can in the next couple of days. Because that

2/3

Chapter Sixty

writing on the wall of the dungeon was nine than just a message

50%

it tells me that after few years, whoever the killer was is still alive

And that he who she is watching

They not know about the tiles we made. They must know that Duven in my mated, they have a way to get into the dungeons.

Oddly enough, there is one other way in, but it's not one we've ever ined.

The last cell, the one that always stands empty, has a false wall that leads in a tunnel sat in turn leads to the forest behind the station.

No one but the twelve of un should know about that.

If i didn't know better. I would suspect one of us. But I do know better so it remains mystery

we are brothers, bonded through our pan. I refuse to believe any one of as did this.

As I reach the third story landing, I smile at the sound of Dave's excited voice. Thanics here!" She says.

Shit Goodnight, Emily yelps

1. watch her from the shadows down the hall as she exits my room and heads for Koda's without so much at a glance up Draven is standing in the doorway, wearing a thin white t-shirt and a sexy smile,

Id rather have a somewhat connection to her, than to connection at all. And when she leaves she's gang to hate me so much she might even try and fuck it out. If

s tethered to me, she'll have a very hard time getting wet for anyone else.

My heart things in my chest as I make a decision,

I am going to mark her tonight.

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,291 words]

3/3

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Sixty-One

DOMONIC

I watch Draven shut the door and I wonder what she's doing. I'm really a little disappointed she didn't run down the hall to greet me, but maybe she doesn't realize that I'm inside the house,

Two days. Two more fucking days. That's all we have left.

I make my way down

my way down the hall silently, creeping into the room to find her coming out of the bathroom,

"Domonic" She smiles, walking toward me.

I see

the discarded pants she was wearing and I can see the stiff peaks of her nipples through the thin white shirt.

Flud

"God." I choke out, my

eyes trailing up her smooth, tan legs.

I'm stiff as hell behind my jeans and the feeling has my feet glued to the floor. I don't want to hurt her. She's injured. Her face, although a little less swollen, is still ripe with the bruises from earlier today. "missed you," she says softly, tossing her long, silky black hair over one shoulder. "I was starting to think maybe you weren't going to be back tonight."

"I told you I would be," I reply. "Are you hurting?"

She shakes her head, eyeing the bulge in the front of my pants.

I decide right then, enough time has been wasted staring at what I want and I pounce on her. Grabbing her body to mine and I plunge my tongue deep into her mouth. The electricity that sparks between us each time we touch is amplified when she moans against me, her body falling limp in my arms as I guide her toward the bed. A fever has come over me, pushing me beyond arousal. I can feel the blood pumping against my jeans, particularly behind my zipper and I groan. My body is burning with need. Stripping her of the t-shirt and reaching for her panties, I growl. She isn't wearing any. Jesus. She smiles beneath me, naked and warm. The bruises on her body have me

tensing my muscles, but then I remind myself, I am going to mark her and after I do they will be gone. Suddenly I am wearing way too many clothes.

I press myself up off the bed and undress in a rush of movement, stroking my already hard cock when I'm finally nude.

Tomorrow night is the full moon," I inform, my fangs slicing out. "I might be a bit rougher tonight, but I'll try my best to control it.

She glares. "You better not! I love that you lose control," she says, sitting up on her ass and bringing her perfect mounds up with a bounce. Shir. Heaven help me

"Don't say that," I chuckle, smiling widely then licking my lips.

"I mean it," she whispers, biting her lip.

I crawl on to the bed, sliding one hand over her butter soft flesh as I do. "I want you to ride me," I hiss, my eyes going heavy as my palm caresses her breasts. Fick they feel amazing. I want you to control me."

Her eyes go hot as her gaze follows the line of my body from my shoulders to my dick. I hear her swallow and I growl, flipping onto my back and placing her gently on my thigh. She straddles me easily and I pull her hips forward, hissing at the feel of her slit against my shaft. She curls her hips in a magnetic thym and my fucking toes curl with need.

"Jesus Christ," I choke out, my fingers latching onto her hips to repeat the movement, with her. "That feels so damn good."

Smiling, she grabs my wrists as she slides my hands up over her breasts. "I've never been on top before," she breathes and I swear my vision goes dark with pleasure.

"Never?" I coo, my legs tingling

"Do I most you? She asks in the huskiest, sexiest voice I have ever heard.

1/3

Chapter Sixty-One

"God yes," I command "Mount me, bitch."

One soft hand goes to the base of my dick and my body shudders, my spine tingling at E

clutch her breasts, squeezing them and massaging them as she rises above my shaft.

"Take it slow," I urge her, watching as she places the head of my cock at her entrance and begins the journey down. I want it to last.

Her mouth falls open with a strangled groan as she lowers herself over me and her muscles clench at the intrusion.

Slower," I warn, my body straining as I resist the urge to buck upward and the way home, it feels too damn good and longer than she is right now. The more of my dick she takes in the farther back her head fills and just the sight is enough to close my eyes.

"Pack, baby. That's so good! She moans once she's seated completely on top of me and I lower my hands to her hips to keep her perfectly still

To not fucken move." This. "Please, just give me a second."

She is so tight. The weight! And with her on top I know she is feeling me expand inside of her as I get ready to maybe it's the weight of her body taking me as deeply as possible- whatever it is - I know I'm not going to let the way I planned

Especially when she begins to move against me, riding me slowly, rising and dropping in a steady rhythm that feels

"Wait baby, please" I beg, my hands stretching up over her shoulders as I open my eyes and attempt to keep her

What I see has me coming without so much as an upward thrust. She's touching herself, her hands massaging her own body. One hand other circles her clit. Her internal muscles are vibrating as she throws her head backward to moan and I shudder inside of her. She Holy shit. I need to do this now.

I bend my knees and pull her forward, clamping one hand in her hair to tilt her head to the side as my body quakes because I know that my pupils have completely dilated and at this moment I look exactly like a beast. My fangs are on fire. second guess what I'm doing. I feel that throbbing pulse of her neck and bite down hard.

My fangs go in and she struggles against me for a second, her moans coming in quick gasps as I fill her with my venom

don't know how painful it is for her, but I know for me, it is the most exhilarating climax I have ever had. Pleasure like I've

body and I'm vaguely aware of her groaning on top of me. My eyes roll to the back of my head and my arms lock around her back, holding?

□

a wave of pure ecstasy. My eyes close as I hold her there, moaning deeply as my body
Toes slack.

I think I black out. Because the next time I open my eyes, my fangs are retracted and he
is fast asleep on top of me with her face buned my neck, Fier wow

are healed and her face is unblemished. The swelling and the bruising from before had
totally disappeared

I kiss the top of her head and shift her body to the side. Tracing a finger over her neck, I
see the faint crescent mark on her skin, just above

heart clenches with an emotion I don't care to name

But I know what it is. I just refuse to acknowledge it.

Kissing her lips as softly as I can, I cover her up and slide carefully out of bed

Im so sorry baby," I whisper. "I wish things were different."

Then I get dressed and give her one last look before I step out of the room to join my
brothers downstairs.

It's time for me to go and destroy my life

No matter how much I wish I didn't have to

2/3

[1,786 words]

Chapter Sixty-Two 50%

DONONIC

Looking around at my brothers sitting around the hat, I can feel their disappointment.
They wanted Draven to stay and although I acted like I was never going to let that
happen - I wanted it too. But now, with Marcus death and the

which he was killed, we all understand it will be safer for her if she Innti.

"This is bullshit," koda hisses.

Okay, maybe not all.

"We can't protect her from what we can't see, Rainier says. The ice of

● of reason as usual,

"I think we can," Bartlett whispers,

"Enough," I snap "everything is set for her to get on a plane tomonow and go to Mian

"What about Emily?" Quinn asks and my eyes go straight for him. "She's homeless."

"Whatever she does is what she does," I say. "She's in no danger that Em are of any of you wants to provide her with a

place to stry-

Koda's sharp chuckle cuts me off. "I don't think so." He shakes his head. "She and Draven he become quick friends. I'm pretty sure where Draven goes, she will

"You don't know that, sigh. "But it doesn't matter either. In fact it might be better she does."

koda smirks, but says nothing, Crossing his arms over his chest, he glares at the four broodingly.

"What about tonight?" Quinn prompts. "Who's gonna watch the part

Goose and Gryffin will take over for us tonight, I inform, meeting the surprised starts of every wolf in the room.

"Wait a minute," Grant hisses. "So we've decided jest to trust them now? Since when did we start leaning on them?"

"Yeah," Logan chimes in. "What happened to no allies'?"

I grit my teeth sighing heavily as Paul, who has been uncharacteristically silent for the past two hours, finally jumps in. The entire Blackjack Pride put their lives on the line to help us take care of the threat that followed Draven here from Miami. They've proven themselves." He swipes at his chin. "Caylin even lost his ability to shift that night."

"Speaking of Gryffin," I say as four motorbikes come racing up the street. I called them in on this meeting."

"What?" Andrew.complains

i've got to be kidding me!" Lief shouts.

"Hey!" I yell, putting the boom of authority into my voice. "Em the Alpha here. Rember?" I sigh. "Now I know for the past few years we've been doing things by a more diplomatic

system than tradition demands, but the fact is I still make all the foil decisions. And I say they can be trusted." Then, as four lion shimmers enter the bar, I add. The fact is we need their support."

"And we're happy to give it, Gayle says, sauntering in with a sway of her hips. Goose Tardora, and Gryffin follow close behind her. Each of them standing as a united front against the back wall.

"How are you doing?" I ask, my eyes going to Gryttin questioningly. "Any change?"

He shakes his lyrail, his eyes fired. "No."

I nod, "I think I may have a theory on that,"

1/5

Chapter Sixty Two

Gaytlin seyn, walking Rusher into the th

cantine porm grips, wird, the mwcaption of the Bona atvs simply andile .

What the fork Paul hins said that was the thing you wing to det

back?

Keila a gase in hand at steel at be glares at me lefore booking meay, let he says nothing. No, his mind seems to be alpendare and 14. what he thinking al everything we

laught alenat mutes and the seems the drugs in a whisper, his eyes begets

Again I heat and another pop shifts through the space,

Gryffin prends à beary fit on the bar. "You think the fine took my room," be concludes hommingly

swer and I see his hew go fight. "I think that's what he was harvesting to change his humans into shifters. And I think thats why you haven't been able to "Son of a bitch," Grant Kisses. That makes a weird anvoot of venue.

"So then," Gryffin starts, fingering his chin. "In theory,

8, it should come fuck on its own enough time or if I find my ma..

I shrug. She can mark you and heal you."

That a fucken brilliant, Conse chirps. "And nuts,

"Unfortunately," Gryffin smiles grimly. 'I don't have a fucking clue who my mate by mate is where she is. The last one of us that found a mate was two generations ag

"Maybe the venom's in the calen" Gayle chimes. "We will haven't searched it thoroughly enough?

"What about the sedans? Lask, "What happened to those?

Goose shakes his head. "We burned them on the mountain right

ht after the raid. If the venuts was in

there, it's gone now."

"What does it feel like? Fada's voice floats forward, softer than I've heard him sprak

"What does "what" feel like? Lask.

"Marking your mate?". He neys, kiu eyes glued to the window at my !

I sigh, the memory of last night diving heat up every nerve in my body. "Really, real fucking gol," I admit, "I cant even begin to explain how good."

"Tas she know that you've marked her?" "Tardora doqulies, a strange smile playing over her lips.

I det her eyes with a

the chuckles, her mocha colored lips twisting into a purse of disapproval. "That's just sening on an many levels."

"No one asked you to approve," I sey sweetly. "We only asked you to pound her."

2/5

Chapter Sixty-Two

She lowers her head in submission. Understood. Not my business," she says with a shake of her head that sends her tightly beaded braids clattering,

"It's time for you to head to the island anyway, I command, my vision going blurry as I'm suddenly physically aware of Deaven waking up. Fuck, I snap. I marvel at how much of

her emotions. I can feel from Gifty miles away. The shit is incredibly perf. And the one thing I know in Draven is pissed. "She's awake:

Paul chuckles. You can feel that??

I nod, doing my best to shake the strange sense of displaced rage that is now burning in the back of my mind somewhere. I can. She's not exactly happy about note I left her

Tadora snorts. "You left her a fucking note after biting her with your sharp ass fangs?

I flip her off and turn to Paul, Take Gayle and Taedora to the island. Take the speedboat and they'll follow j

Are you sure you want to do it that way?" He asks.

Inod. Oh yeah, I'm not leaving anyone stranded there ever again."

you on my yacht."

s that what shes mad about?" Paul ads.

I shrug. Then in true Draven fan my phone rings in my pocket and I grimace krawing without a doubt that it's her. God, I'm gonna m

"Fuck." I hiss and the entire room laughs. I answer, "Baby?"

DRAVEN

lokkenbor

I'm standing in front of the mirror in the bathroom after my shower, when I realize that my body has healed. And it's not just that. Every single mark and avery tim scar, - every little imperfection that I have ever had, including the rip in my ear lobe that Leo put there yesterday is gone. All that remains is a tiny hint of a crescent shaped abrasion on my neck. Exactly where Demonic bit me last night.

What in the actual fuck?

I can't believe it. It s a damn miracle. So of course, I forget to put on my

to put on my clothes when I peek out into the hall in search of Domonie, or at the very least, one of

To my surprise, no one seems to be here. So I flip the window shades open and look toward the wharf.

The boats are gone.

Wall Fit be a worry as bitch.

They fucking left me here! Alone??? Why? Because of the full fucking a

"Emily? I shout, charging up the stairs toward Koda's room.

I swear to God if they took her with them 10-

aha sleepy Emily stumbles out. She's wearing one of Kodas shirts and I can't help but smile at how adorable she looks rubbing the sleep from her eyes.

"Is Koda in there with your 1 Equity, hoping that she was able to talk to him the way she has been wanting to..

io," the groans. "He never came back to the room last night. He slept on the couch.

I roll my eyes, fores. "Well, I'm glad you're still here at least."

3/5

Chapter Sixty-Two

Since we seem to be alone for rrupts in my body.

ent, I don't bother to dress when I head for the kitchen to make something to eat. T

1. The moment I reach the fridge, anger

A fucking note and when I read the damn thing I'm burning with anger.

I thought the understanding was that the pack would run in these wood tonight:

They're not coming back tonight." This. "None of them are".

I race spstairs and grab my phone to dial Demonic. He picks up on the

every first ting

"Baby?" He roos and although just the sound of his deep, sexy voice has me ting u between my legs, I focus on my anger instead.

1. q. "You re not coming back tonight? Are you serion?"

What the fuck? I soap.

Listen for a second okay-""

"No, No 1 don't think I will." I growl out. First, I wake up to an empty bed and then I find out that I'm stranded on a goddamned island without so much as a kint

"Fuck you!" I snap. "What if something happens out here, huh? What if by some act of God a fucking tree crashes into the house and one of the two of us girls are impaled by a renegade branch, Domonic? How will we go and get help? Swing?" His chuckle has me tightening my internal muscles and I blame his fantastic penis and his dimples for the wetness that fairly drips down my legs

Baby, don't worry.

1. v. Paul is headed over

r with a boat and a couple of friends I want you to meet

About? Okay, okay. Friends though? "What friends?" I ask suspiciously.

"They re Gryffins friends. Lion shifters. They'll look out for you tonight."

Lion stuften? He sending lion shifters and Paul out here to be alone with me? Really?

Ooh, Paul. Haven't seen him in awhile," I trase.

His growl is immediate. "He will not be staying

"Are the lions rute?" I taunt.

"Not funny, baby." He laughs, and I lose my smile. They're female shifters. And before you ask, no I have never been with either of them. But I have known them for "Whatever, I say. I'm still mad at you."

I can feel him smile through the phone and the e strangest senuation of warmth travels through my chest when he laughs.

I have a feeling you'll like them," he says. "I have to go. I'll call you before sundown,

As I hang up the phone, I realize something. I've had quite a few questions that Dominic's been brushing off. I want to know what a means for instance

Suddenly, I cannot wait for our guests to antire,

"I have a feeling I say to myself that I am gonna like them too."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,413 words]

Chapter Sixty-Three DRAVEN

"So what you're telling me," Emily says while trying with a piece of bacon on her plate. "Is that he sank his fangs into your neck and you liked it. Then you woke up and your face was healed along with all your bruises and your shredded earlobe."

I smile as widely as I can before biting into one of the perfect biscuits that Emily made for our breakfast and nod. "Yeah. And if I'm not mistaken, I think my boobs

are laughing. "It wasn't weird fucking sex with a man that had his fangs out?"

She is just... beautiful."

I smirk "You seen him naked. He could sprout three heads during sex and I'd still rock the fuck out of his body," I say. "He is

laughing, heaping a spoonful of hollandaise over her biscuits. Then, she shakes her head. "I'd be lying if I said he didn't scare me to death. I can tell he doesn't like

me. I suppress a groan. It's on the tip of my tongue to tell her that Domonic doesn't give a fuck about her one way or the other, but I don't. Instead, I just smile. "You'd be surprised what turns you on given the specimen." Narrowing my eyes at her, I add, "What if Koda had a pair of fangs and he wanted to bone, what would you do?" She chokes, powers of biscuits flying from her mouth. "W-what?"

I pizzle, noting the flush of red tainting the perfect golden skin of her cheekbones. Don't pretend like you don't like him, I can see how much you

She takes a deep drink of her juice, her eyes falling sad. "It doesn't matter what I like. He doesn't like me."

Hmm. Not the feeling I get from him. Although Koda and Quinn never said what they were fighting about, I got the distinct impression it was about Emily. "You don't know that," I chirp. "I think he does. He's just... super reserved."

"What she bites out. "No. He really doesn't like me. Her face falls, a melancholy cloud shadowing her features. "Yesterday, when he and Domonic came back with you, I tried to kiss him.!"

My eyes go wide. "Why am I only hearing about this now?"

She shakes her head, closing her eyes. "It was stupid. He practically threw me into the wall, I was so embarrassed. He hasn't spoken to me since then."

Weird. I would have bet my left ass cheek that Rod had a thing for her. "Well what about Quinn then, I coo, a sly smile spreading across my lips. "He's into you, for

She takes a deep breath. "Yeah, I noticed, but... I don't like him like that."

Well, maybe you could. Maybe the problem is that you're fixated on Koda, not so much that you aren't attracted to Quinn. Because trust me girl, I've seen all Quinn has to offer, and it's quite a bit." And maybe all Koda needs is a little jealousy to shake him up a bit. "I doubt it," she says. "He literally told me that I disgust him and that if I ever touch him again he'll let Domonic feed on me."

The juice I was drinking right then sputters out of my mouth in a spray of laughter. He said what?"

Her face tells me she didn't find Koda's threat nearly as amusing as I did. "He said he'd let Domonic eat me. Does he do that? Does Domonic eat people?"

I grin, thinking of the times I've had Domonic's mouth between my legs. "He does," buckle. But only to pleasure them."

Her face flushes again as if she's not sure what I mean by that. "I'll take your word for it."

Reaching toward her hand on the table, I give it a squeeze. "I don't believe Koda is disgusted with you as you think he is. I've seen the way he looks at you. Staring at you whenever you're not paying attention. I sigh. "I don't understand why he's acting that way, but let me tell you, Domonic was the same when we first met. He literally demands that I take the first train out of town

Why'd he do that? She asks. It's obvious that he adores you. He almost ripped my head off when Leo took off with you. As if he failed in stopping him somehow."

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Three

I frown "Honestly, I'm still not entirely certain, maybe fear? Or insecurity? I

You haven't asked him?"

Taking a deep breath, I begin to answer her, but the sound of a beat engine has me leaping from the table in per out the window. "They're here," I say: "What's here? Emily

chirps, standing at my back and following my line of sight. Her he falls on Paul's gorgeous facade pulling up to the shore. "Whos that? "That's Paul," I say with a smile. "Mister Coffer."

My eyes focus on the yacht polling up and the females that climb down. Shil. They brouil

Perfect

DOMONIC

Sitting outside of the jewelry store after shopping, I can't tear my eyes away from the two rings in my lap. Why did I buy two? What was the point in doing that?

One ting was simple diamond chip on a thin gold band. The red velvet box is just as dainty as the ring. Not too pricey and not at all special, It was a ring with a purpose and was probably the more basic of any in the shop.

But the other... the moment I sair it, I was hypnotized. The white gold band gleamed in the light, begging for my attention. Two perfect, dazzling emeralds set around a beautifully cut diamond at the center. It was perfect and I couldn't leave the store without it. It reminded me of someone, Someone who I never hunted to lopet. So I decided to purchase that one too. It would serve as a reminder for me whenever I felt the need to tostore myself.

Fick. My chest is aching as I pull away from the curb and head toward the club where know Margo is working Glittering stars and pixie dust sprinkled over her voluptuous body that does absolutely nothing for my dick. I hate what I'm about to da almost as much as I hate why I have to do it. But I would rather have a living Draven that hates me than a dead one that loved me

Love. Ha! Daven never said it. But I definitely felt it. She loves me. I'm almost positie she does. And sure, maybe most of it is the mate bood, but therein lies the reason for its entire existence. Because a higher power, greater than ourselves, predestined us to be together. Unfortunately, there are some things that are more important than destiny. Things that I absolutely refuse to risk. Destiny be damned.

I park in the back of the club in my usual spot and walk inside. Glancing around, I meet Margo's eyes instantly. She's tentative-not really sure if she should approach me or not - so I plaster a lake ass smile on my face and nod for her to join as in my back office. She smirks, swaying her hips as she bounces my way, I close the door behind her and take a seat behind my desk. She follows, sitting in front of me on the table with her legs wide open. I refuse look between her knees. "Close your damn legs, Margo. Now, I hiss

She does as I tell her, but in a way I'm sure she thinks is sexy. She smirks, leaning toward me. Is she finally gone?" She whispers.

I shake my head, no. Closing my eyes and hardening my heart I reach into my pocket to retrieve one of the boxes. I tell her, "I have a very special job for you to do and if you get it right, I'll make sure you're properly rewarded." T

"I don't want to be properly rewarded!" She snaps. Chuckling, she eyes the box in my hand. "There's only one thing I really want."

I got my teeth. Maybe

be this was a dumb idea, but then again - I don't have any better ones so...

What's that?" I hiss, crossing my arms over my chest and scowling at Margo as she likes a seat on my lap. I want to toss her off. Even my dick seems to shrivel away from her, bringing rude sort of secret smile to my face. "Name your price." Of course, Margo mistakes my smile for encouragement and she leans forward to place her overly stretched lips upon my ear. "I want you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Sixty-Four

DRAVEN

Draven, this is Gayle and this is Toedora, Paul says once he and the two females are finally inside.

The five of us are gathered around the living room. Tadora sits upon the ottoman, devilish smirk on her face. She is gorgeous, with skin the color of hot chocolate and long golden braids dressed in an array of different beads that dance down her back. Her hazel eyes study me with fascination and I have to wonder what about me interests her so much. The other shifter, Gayle, appears to be a female version of Ciryffin. Colden skin, golden hair, and the same light amber eyes. I can see the resemblance there and I know right away that she must be his sister. The pair of them seem so hypnotized by me I'm curious as to what Demonic told them to get

them here.

Emily sits at one end of the couch and I sit at the other. I wonder if Paula and the lips know that Emily is still under the impression that the only shifter of the group is Domenic. Although at first, I thought it best to leave it to the wolves to explain things to her, Em beginning to think maybe I should be the one. Partly because I want to be able to ask my questions whole Emily's in the room and partly because I'm afraid of what they're discussing right now.

The fall moon.

"M dawn tomorrow, we'll be back to normal and the four of you should be free to head back to Port Orchard Poul says.

Emily's mouth falls open and I meet her questioning gaze with a tempered one of my own. Shaking my head no, I plead with her to keep her mouth shut for now. Her jaw snaps closed with a sharp little clack and she nods.

I clear my throat. "I need to speak with Emily alone for a few minutes."

"Right on." Taedora says, getting up from her seat. 'Gayle and I need to do a couple poses of the island. You know, make sure there aren't any stray animals running - around

"Yup, and I'll be heading out," Paul chimes. His eyes meet mine for a brief moment. Nice to see you're alive and well. I was worried about you. I wanted to call you, but Domanic-he sighs-"well you know how he is."

"I do," I say, standing to give Paul a tight hug. "Thanks!"

Paul's arms linger around me for a whole moment, his lips falling toward my ears. "want you to know, I'm going to do my best tonight to find out who killed Marcus. There's got to be a trail there somewhere. Our senses will be stronger tonight hopefully we'll get a lead." My body goes rigid. Marcus is dead? And they don't know who did

"Shit," Paul hisses, apparently noticing how my body froze. "You didn't know."

I pull back, my eyes going toward Emily as she asks, "Who's Marcus?"

*111 explain in a few minutes." I tell her, werking to control the sudden ferocity of my langer. "How long has Marcus been dead?" I ask Paul,

He shakes his head. "I think you better talk to Donomie about this. I didn't know that be

"How long?" I shriek, my body tight with fury.

"Domonic found him yesterday," Paul sighs.

"And he said nothing," I growl out, my eyes falling closed. "And the doctor?" I hiss, teasing my body and preparing for disappointment.

"He's gone," Plays. "But Demonic killed him days ago."

Days ago?" I chuckle, my laugh humorless and full of indignant fury. And the bastard never said one fucking word to me about it. Who the fuck does be think he is?

"You can't tell him I told you, Paul pleads. "If you do, he will quite literally rip my throat out tonight."

nod, no longer feeling guilty about my choice to tell Emily about the lot of them being wolves.

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Four

Paul states, trying for a change of subject. "We

"Someone not only knows about our dungeons but they also know how to get in and out without being detected, P hope that tonight, we'll be able to scour the wood behind the sheriff station and catch a scent." "Ascent" Elly quips.

Paul jerks, his eyes falling heavy. "She doesn't know?"

I shake my head. "She knows about Domenic. But not about the rest of you." I sigh. "But she will. Because I plan to tell her before the girls get back."

"Ah, Paul smiles, his eyes roving over Emily in approval. "Let me know how that goes

Thinking of Domonice overbearing rules as far as who I'm allowed to talk to and who I'm not, I smile. Do me a favor Paul White your phone number down for me. Id like to have it memorized."

Paul smirks Absolutely princess."

I turn to Emily. "It is time for the two of us to have a little chat."

DOMONIC

"I cant believe you're asking me to lie to her," Bartlett says while the two of us finish setting up the camera monitors in the back of the bah,

Hopefully we'll be able to catch the breakin this time. I'm usually against cameras, but with the help of Goose and a couple of the other lion shifter, we were able to place them a bit higher this time. Wobes do not climb trees nearly as well as lions d. That's a fact. These new cameras are too high up for anyone take out unless they do so with a sniper rifle.

Its not going to be a lie. As of today, the place is yours. I already put the place in your name as well as the bank account. Everything is in order. All that's left is you to gift it to her. You then provide her with a ticket and another for Emily, if she wants. It all has to come from you, because chances are - after bomomow- not going to accept a goddamn

thing I give her." I frown. "My goal is to have her stay connected with at least one of us. You're the natural choice. You've been her hero from day one."

I still don't think she'll decide to leave. That girl is a fighter. It would almost take an act of God to push her away from here. She loves this place," Bartlett says.

"I know and I wish she could stay," I groan, falling back into the desk chair of the back office and burying my face in my hands. But you have no idea how scared I was when Leo had her out on that boat. Until we get the bastard behind the fire, I need her away from here. Somewhere safe."

at let her in- she might leave willingly. She'd understand your need to keep "You know she would want to help catch the killer. If you would just tell her about her safe if she knew what you stood to lose, Bartlett growls. "She's one of us. Whether you want her to be or not." I hate when he makes sense. Really, I do. But he doesn't quite realize how feisty Draven is. If I tell her the truth, not only will she refuse to leave, she'll dive headst into the danger herself and try to find the killer. Tean't have that. I refuse to mourn Deaven. I will not let her put herself in harm's way. My eyes raise to meet Bartlett's as I bring a tumbler of whiskey to my mouth. "My decision is final Bartlett. Now are you going to do as I asked you to? Or am I going to have to have someone else do it?"

His jaw clenches and he pounds a fist on the desk, cracking a heavy marble paperweight in half when he does. "I'll do it. You're right about one thing, if she accepts help from anyone after tomorrow, it'll probably be me. And I want her to be safe just as much as you do." I chuckle, "Oh I doubt that.". the bar. "What is it?"

phone rings and my body goes rigid when Margo's name flashes across my screen. "Fuck," I curse before effing it as I step out of

lmall

moved in, her throaty voice chokes out. "Why don't you come home and we can bless this place properly?"

Lgrit my teeth, the feeling of betrayal running so deep in my bones that my eyes are turning. "I told you to wait until the morning"

"Well, I thought it best that I got it done tonight." She laughs. "Don't worry, I didn't touch her things. Well, I mean, I parked them, but I didn't steal anything. Her lingerie won't fit me anyway. To tight around the top."

"I told you got to touch her things," I hiss Son-of-a-bitch! I should have picked someone else. Anyone else to do this. Fucken bitch, just the thought of her touching Dave's things makes me want to bite something. "Relax," she chuckles. "Look at it this way. She'll be all set to leave the moment the back"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,518 words]

Chapter Sixty-Five DRAVEN

Surprisingly enough, Emily took the news better than I thought she would. I expected her to faint, or scream, or run from me, but she did none of the things. Instead, she simply nodded, the quirkiest of smiles on her face and a look of near disbelief in her eyes. "Emily," I prompt. "Do you understand what I just told you? Koda is a wolf"

"Yeah-no-yeah, I get it. I mean, I understand what you do Lionesses eat?" at you said of course I'd":

Surma around, putting her back to me. "What should I make for lunch? I mean = I

I glare at her rigid backside, wondering if maybe she's in shock couldn't say. Maybe we should ask them."

"We eat what you guys eat," Gayle

she enters from the backdoor and steps past the pantry. At least we do when we're human."

My eyes find hers and I grin. I'm guessing your hearing is more exceptional

She nods. That's an understatement. However, wolves have the trophy on

in that one as far as shifters go.

Wrong! Tardira disagrees, entering from the front

● house. """"You're forgetting about Astonoo! Wir met him last year when he flew in on vacation."

"Oh yea," deyle chirps. That man was hot. Never thought bats were sexy until him." Rie Laces me and nods. His hearing is second to none."

I rap at the same time Emily spins around

ever told as a child. "Are you telling mir that

taway I start thinking about Dracula and vampires and all the scary stories

Tardora chuckles. I mean I guess you could call

"The also enjoys draining Hood

ing blood fro

Wh what? Emily ch

"But not for food," Gayle winks. "Just for pleasure"

"Measure?" I Manch

"That man was back for pleasure, Taedora sight.

"Omigod," Emily whimpers

you wanted to. Antonius is a shifter that changes from but to man, and he does in fact have "Jesus Christ," This

"He's fine as hell," Gayle chuckles. Too bad Gryffran him off. He and I had a blast together.

"Hal" Tardora snaps. "You're crazy. That man was way more into me than he wi

One of these day The, you're going to have to accept the truth. He wanted me. H

1. me. He even tried to mark me as his

My cars perk up. My head is on a swivel at I look back and forth between the two lionesses. "Mark you as his? What exactly does that mean?"

-Tardora begins to laugh, her eyes falling toward my throat. "Oh that's right, I almost forgot," she clicks her tongue. "Dum did you dirty as hell. Biting into you and

not telling you shit about what was going on." Her eyes find the faint crescent at the line of my throat and her eyes sparkle, "but I assume he had his reasons." Her eyes Butter graciously. "You are his mate aber all,"

To my complete and utter surprise. Emily is the one who answers me. "With shapeshifters, a mate is one's other half. A perfect match gifted by some higher power,

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Five

she whispers. The one and poly

I stare, tilting my head in incredulous skepticism, "You know this because-

person is often called a sowsate/

She grimaces, "My grandma had a ton of werewolf books in her house. I used to read them all the time.

For some reason, I really thought you'd be more disturbed by this, You called Drenoid a monster'

She glowers. He tried to eat me!

"Some of what she says is accurate, Gayle cuts in. "Some is not," she sighs, nodding toward Tardona. "For lion shifters, the mate bond is different. The males have been known to possess more than one mate, be it male or female. But for wolves, then it's only one." She shrugs, "Actually, not all shifters are like that. But for some reason, lion shifters are not. We can have multiple connections. Which is why it is so loved that Gryffin

"-hasn't found his mate yet!" Tardona interrupts, sending her female companion an obnoxious look of disapproval. "Were you aware that because you are a mate - you never have to worry about him getting another girl pregnant?!"

I snort. "What

Her eyes sparkle. "Shifters can only reproduce with their mates. Sure, they can mark anyone they want to, but the mate bond is special. It is that way for a reason. And, as I said before, some lions can have more than one mate. Which can cause a lot of problems in a pride."

"Right," Gayle coos. "For instance, Gryffin's dad had two mates. Gloria had him and my mother, Dana, had him. We're half siblings

I nodded. "I thought so."

lips. "Our mamas hated each other. Still do."

"Yup." Gayle pops her lips.

"So there's never been a wolf shifter with two mates? Not ever?" I inquire, not completely sure how much of this information might be true. I mean I'm sure I know what they're talking about - but I would just feel better if Drenoid was the one telling me these things. I definitely would be more inclined to believe it if that were the case. As is it these girls could be wrong. They're lion shifters, not wolf shifters. If I am Drenoid's mate like they say, wouldn't he have wanted to keep me away from the start?

"Not that we know of, Gayle says with a frown. "But I guess anything is possible.

over the ocean.

"I wonder if Koda has a mate, Emily whispers, turning away from us to stare out the rain
ov

"No, he doesn't," Taedora says. These dudes are weird about mates. The Red Wolf Pack is the only pack of Wolf shifters left in the Northwest and they run things way differently than most packs do." "How so?" I ask

Gayle sighs, sending Taedora a warning glance and a shake of her head. "You really ought to ask Dumonic about that. It's one thing for us to tell you about our rules and the basic rules of shifters in general, but it's something else entirely for either of us to speak on the inner workings of a wolf pack."

Tedo met my eyes for a long moment. There's a lot of history in the hills of Port Orchard, Gayle's right. We don't want to upset anybody. I mean - this is the first time in five years that we've been allies. I don't want to mess it up now. Not with what Gryffin's going through with his lon",

"Tar," Gayle hisses.

"Right, sorry." Taedora groans. "Enough about shifters. Who wants a drink?"

Th-uliah I complain. "You never finished explaining about vampires!"

Tardora giggles as the rest of us follow her into the living room and she heads straight for the bar.

"Oh Antonio, my sweet Antonio. Her eyes twinkle. "Not vampires. Hat shifters. But, you think about it. That's probably where some of those human horror stories probably come from:

"Bat shifters are natives of Transylvania. It's the only place beautiful enough for those winged beasts. Gayle was taking a pint of tequila from behind the bar and taking a drep drink directly from the bottle. "There are stories that claim all shifters originated from there, but I don't believe L

2/3

Chapter Sixty-Five

"Did you ever see him in his bat form?" I ask

The ladies nod in unison.

"Scariest thing I ever saw," Toedora squeaks. I mean, yikes. They're huge and virtually impossible to catch" She looks around. "Not that I ever tried or anything"

"Hat That's all you tried!" Gayle snipes..

I frown. "But you said Gryffin chased Antonio, away? Why - if you both like

A strange quiet seems to fall over both girls, "That's a story for another time.

"What?" Emily squawks "No way! You won't tell us the wolf pack secrets, an you have to give us this."

Gayle growls, "Fine! You win. Ell give you one wolf secret, because I refuse to tell you out any more about that." Gayle proceeds to down half the bottle of tequila and she doesn't so much as cough. There. Now nothing I say can be held aglit me Because I'm drunk" "Pretty sure it doesn't work that way," Tredora chuckles.

"Today it does," Gayle sighs. The reason why the Red Wolf Pack is closed off, is because five years ago, more than half of them deserted,

My eyes arrow at her. Deserted?"

"Cayle..." Taedora wams.

Gayle ignores her. "When their old packhouse burned down."

"Gayle!" Taedora snaps, her eyes flashing. "Don't!"

"It burned down?" I ask, worry trembling through me as I realize, maybe I don't want to hear the rest of this tale. At least, not from her.

"It was on the night of a full moon," Gayle sighs. "Just like tonight. But their packhouse wasn't the only thing that was lost that night. Her face falls heavy and she attempts to take another swig of the bottle but Tandora snatches it out of her hands That-is-o

she grinds out through clenched teeth. "Either you shut the fuck up or I shut you the fuck up,"

Gayle nods, tears filling her eyes. "You're right. I'll stop."

Tedora meets my gaze. "Is there somewhere she can lay down for a while?"

I nod, "Yeah. Third floor, last door."

"Full moons suck," I hear Gayle whimper as Tandora leads her away.

Watching the two of them climb the steps my heart is full. I sense a deep loss in Cay's heart. One that seems somehow tied to the fire she mentioned Tied to the wolves history.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,487 words]

373

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Sixty-Six DOMONIC

Claring at the writing on the wall in the dungeon, I growl. We haven't removed it because the moment I shift tonight, I will begin my search from right fucking here. Koda, Rainier, and I will bank out from the back passageway and me out in a half circle in an attempt to catch the scent of the killer. The rest of the pack will scour the treet hanks behind the sheriff station. It is my belief that

river his escape route, as it would be the best way to disguise his

sernt. Water is annoying that WN

I exit out of the back page and into the forest to stare at the trees. How I wish I had spent a little more time at the packhouse this moming. I wanted to hold Draven just a little longer. Wanted to somehins, infuse the feel of her body into my arms. Unfortunately, its much too late for that now.

ing into my pocket, I pull out the emerald ring. Then as quickly as Imable, I dig a two foot hole into the ground with my clans. Placing the ring inside, I make

with myself.

When I finally catch the heidend who has been terrorizing our pack - J will die this up and make Draven my wife

As the sun begins to

to set over the horizon, I dial her number. I just need to hear here before I disappear into the woods for the night. I would like nothing better than to keep Draven with me. So the stress of finding the killer soon is higher than it ever was. "Hello," She cool, antwering on the first ring.

ith just the excitement in her voice, my heart aches in my chest as I picture her plump lips twisting into a smile.

"Hey God, I sound terrible. So much for hiding my emotions,

I can feel a tremble of unease skating through the bond and I know she must be feeling the doom in my heart the same way that I am sensing her upset.

I chuckle, closing my eyes to fabricate walls in my head. Building them brick by brick and cementing them together around my mind. "Nothing. I just wish I'd gotten another kits from you before I left."

And that's the

the truth, because tomorrow there won't be one. More than likely, all I will get from her is a punch to the gut.

7 wish you had too," she whispers. "But I'm glad you called."

My muscles go tight as the sun falls lower, turning the sky a strange syrupy red where it is normally pink. I pour ice over my soul when I speak next by picturing Draven's body surrounded by a fire, started by an unknown arsonist. I let the image of her dead and fried to a blackened crisp, heat my words as I grow into the phone. "I'll need you back at the house tomorrow morning, fint thing."

I can sense her startle at my tone. Her voice is shadowed with unease, "You mean you're not coming back here?"

"No," I hiss, feeling the muscles of my legs start expanding "I just want you to know that no matter what happens tomorrow, I

"I love you," she says suddenly and I'm speechless.

My heart warms to about twelve thousand degrees and my

I my dick goes rock hard. Semily? Right now

not the time fundar.

Fuck. I can't help the tears that prick my eyelids as I realize, I cannot say it back. I want to, but I'm already changing. My mouth fills with teeth and fangs and my tongue has become long and useless. Then again, maybe its good that I can't speak, because if I admit something like that to her, she won't leave tomorrow. It's hard mough for me to accept that she's going to hate me when she comes home to find Margo at my place.

that doesn't mean that I don't relish every spark of pleasure her words give me like the selfish fuck that I am and that's exactly what I do. My wolf rumbles with elation as I drop down on all fours and my clothes rip from my body. I fuck my phone behind a large tree root and mark the damn thing with a swipe of my

horror. Deaven a voice as I step away, I realize I recognize her. In my jure anal know her. "Be safe."

My will whines with delight as

grolle timber of heroe

within

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Six

50%

Usually during a full moon shift my Haman memories are muddled, but such is not the case this time. Now, without a doubt I'm sure, Draven is my one true love and mbtc.

So I tip my head back toward the sky and

dark and the sun disappears completelua beckoning howl into the air around doe. Calling all my brothers to their stations as the moon dimmers high in the

Taking a deep drink of the air, I can smell something in the wind. Something familiar and primal and canine,

Memories spark to life as images from that night five years ago parade through my mind.

The smell of burning evergreens, of black soot on my tongue, the sounds of women wailing and crying, Children screaming on the outside of the parkhouse as the human firefighters fail to douse the flames.

My nose hits the ground upon the freshly turned earth and I sent him. The killer. Like a shadow on a cloudy day, it is barely there and incredibly delicate on the senses. I touch it with my tongue, committing the scent to memory while at the same time, accepting exactly what the killer is.

He is no lion, nor pure human, not panther, nor bat. He is a wolf

My eyes heat with urgency as Koda and Rainier step out of the shadow to join me as we chase this phantom's footsteps, more than a day old

DRAVEN

Staring out into the night from the safety of the living room, I can't help but feel like I should be back in Port Orchard. The way Domonic was speaking to me before I told him that I loved him, has me on edge. I feel like there's something he's not telling me. In fact, I'm almost positive there is.

Something in his voice has me troubled. Maybe I could take the yacht out the middle of the night and return back to the mainland by myself.

Staring longingly out at the wharf, I feel her before I hear her.

"Don't even think about it," Taedora says from just behind as "We were told to keep you here. At least until the morning"

"He's up to something," I say "I can feel it."

Turning around, I note the pure understanding in her gaze. She nods, walking up to stand next to where I stare out the window. "I believe you and trust me when I say, his fear for you is real.

I study her, wondering if she might share what she knows with me. Something happened to him, didn't it? Something that has made him the way he is. Closed off and cold."

Is he cold?" She giggles. "I've never seen him as passionate about anything before-as he is about you."

I sigh. "There's something he's not telling me. Besides the fact that he killed the doctor. Something else. But I don't know what." I turn away from the window and take a seat on the sofa. "What is Taedora? What is he so scared of?"

She groans, her eyes moving toward the stains. "If it weren't so tragic, I'd tell you. But the seriousness of it won't allow me to. You have to ask Domonic. He needs to

be the one."

"But I'm his mate. You said so."

She nods. "Right. You are. But you didn't need me to tell you that. I'm sure you could feel it from the moment you met

I grin. "I won't deny that I've felt a pull toward him since the moment I met him. That's a fact. But I still don't know what it all means"

"Do you know what an Alpha Wolf is?"

Of course. I learned about them in school just like anyone else did."

"Well," Taedora says, Taking a seat across the sofa from me. "Domonic is the Alpha of the Red Wolf Pack. Just as his father was before." She quirks an eyebrow into a graceful arch. "Effectively, that makes you their queen."

2/3

Chapter Sixty-Six

Luna...

The word I heard one of them mention before suddenly chimes into my head with res meaning

I ignore that part for a moment and focus on the mystery of his family. Donsonic's father," I question "what happened to him? Did he dar

She shakes her head, her eyes falling dark with sow "But he might as well have.

My body jerks, "What? Why would you say something like that?"

She lifts her chin, a cold ankle sparkling behind the heavy soot of her lathes. Because Domonics father lost his soul the night he lost such is a late some deem worse than death."

"What? You mean..."

nate. And for a weit

"Yes." She says and 1 gulp.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,772 words]

he Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates. Chapter Sixty-Seven DOMONIC

Lam already down the ther from the ocean's spillway when daun rises. The orange and pink tangerine sky pressing against the long dark of the night. We hunted for hos. Catching the scent of a wolf here and the scent of a human there. Neither with any concrete ties to the other. The tang of the killer still ripe on my senses, called the search to a halt just beyond the beach, Just like that night five years ago, failed. Put at least now, our eyes were open. Now, we had concrete proof that the killer was still watching us. That alone was at least a leg up. Because it was clear to me that whomever was breaking into the bar was not the same guy

The scents didn't match up. The bar had been broken into by a shafter every time. A cat most likely. Which was the reason behind our broken ties with the Blackjack Pride up until recently, However, I was starting to believe Gryffin had at least some idea who might be beraking into the bar and no idea who the killer was. Pressing me forward as the sky lit to a supreme blue, was the urge, I was having to make it back home before Draven did, because something was telling me she was already on het was.

She didn't get even a wink of sleep and I know this because I felt her stress through the band the entire night. She would be headed back to Port Orchard the

moment the rest of the ladies were ready.

I need to be back at my place where Margo is waiting.

Once I reach the station 1 shift at the backside of the building, grabbing my extra clothes and my phone from behind the trees as I head out front. Without saying word to any of my brothers, I dress and hop inside my Hummer to race toward my house, Passing the docks on the way, I see the yacht still hasht pulled into harbor yet and lionesses motorbikes are still parked in the lot.

Good. This gives me just enough time to steel myself against what comes next, hast with the thought, an image of Draven's smiling face flashes through my mind. I see her as she was the day she arrived, sassy and defiant. I smell her the way I did when she opened the door to the bar that day. All lavender and sweet honey Her essence carried on the ends of her long black locks like sugar on silk. My hist curls over my steering wheel when I imagine the look on her face when I kissed her ch my yacht. The memory of her lips on mine heating flesh to near buming

I am going to miss her so goddamn much.

But this has to be done. Especially now that the killer has stepped back into the gate. Because I'd rather lose Margo to his shit than Draven and that is the ugly, fucked up truth. Homible karma, here I come. I'm swapping Draven out with a bitch could care less about losing. Yes. That is correct. I'm a piece if shit,

Pulling into my driveway, I waste no time bolting into the house to hit the showers. Stepping into my bedroom, my stomach coll. Margo lay asleep in my bed. Her long

hairsprayed tangles fucking up my pillow cases. I sneer, not being able to help myself as I'm hit with the pungent aroma of her cheap ass perfume and the wolf in me growls in revulsion

Just because she's gross and a bit of a bitch doesn't mean she deserves to die Danc

And no, it doesn't. But at this point in time I really don't care. The truth is, yes, I would feel bad if Margo was killed because of what I'm about to do. Of course I would, but I doubt I would cry over it. And yeah, I'd probably get put on some universal lat for the forever fucked - but it would be worth it if it meant Draven were alive and well somewhere safe.

So without another thought, I take a deep drink of whiskey, jump in the shower, get dressed, then march my sorry ass downstairs to wait in the living room.

Margo doesn't know what I am. What the twelve of us are. All she knows is that I need Draven on the first plane out of here and I'm w get it done.

ng to shack up with her to

Yup. I am probably going to hell. DRAVEN

The sun is high in the sky as the four of us pull into the docks. The entire ride over Coyle and Tadora kept silent as the dead. Emily was the only one bouncing with the excitement of her new wolf knowledge. But of course, she wasn't privy to all that Tadora shared with me last night. No. I was keeping that shit to myself.

The light of the sun sparkles against the can as we near the marina. The calm of being boats sending a wave of longing through me, I grew up in Miami. Yachts and all manner of boats were a constant sight with different marinas scattered up and down the coast. Sure, it was beautiful there. Sunny and warm. But there was just something about this place that called to my heart.

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Seven

I wonder what it's like here in the summertime.

The four of us stepped off the boat and immediately beaded for the parking lot. Emily and I trailing the lionesses while our eyes scanned the street,

"We can walk from here," I say. "The house is just a few miles uphill."

Taedora laughs as we pause next to a couple of motorbikes and both women unlock helmets from beneath the seals. Not happening lady. You'll ride with me and Em can ride with Gayle, Put this on."

She hands me her bl

● blood red helmet and my eyes trail across her bike searching for another. "What about you?"

"What about me? I'm a damn shifter," she says with a wink. "Put it on."

Rolling my eyes I do as told and the next thing you know the four of us are ripping up the street toward Dumonic's house. The wind and the power of the ride between my legs sends a wave of pure glory through me for a long moment and I suddenly wonder why I never learned to drive one of these things. The feeling I get as we soon through the

open air is one of freedom and rising thunder. Of power and escape. Flove it.

But the moment we pull into the driveway behind Domonic's Hummer, something inside of me dies. A curl of despair, rots deep within my chest and I can't shake my unease no matter how hard I try...

"Something is wrong. I hiss as I climb off the bike and stare at the house in front of me. The shades are open and I can see Domenic sitting inside. He awaits me with a cold indifference that feels a lot like I just stepped back in time.

Taedora nad sadly, taking the helmet from me and placing it over her head. "You have my number. Call me whenever you need me and I'll be there

bad is abo

heather softly, sensing she knows something bad is about to take place.

"Promise me," she prompts and I nod

promise." Tuning to Emily as the two lionesses roar away, I whisper, "Wait here, aky? I need to find out what the fuck is going on."

Her gaze narrows but she doesn't argue and I spin on my heels to head right through the front door. The moment I step inside I free. My backpack and a small suitcase lay against the wall leading into the kitchen and suddenly I know this fucker intends for me to leave. "What the fuck is this, Domonic?" I growl, turning cold eyes his way. "Is that my stuf

I probably shoulder have told him I love re

The man I see seated on the sofa is not the same one I shared my past with. The way he is looking at me - no, glaring at me - makes me feel like old news. Like some he tasted already, someone he has finished with already. He killed the Doc and he killed Len. Marcus is dead. All open threats vanquished, he thinks he can

Well fuck that

"The apartment at the bar is ready for you now." He stands, walking toward me with a slow tortured gait. "I can't have you here any longer."

My body jerks, tear filling my eyes despite that I will die before releasing them. "When I'm not going to play this game of his. I'm not going to let him push me away so that he can protect me. Because no matter what he says to me today, I know that is exactly what this is. "Why?" I snap. My emotional side getting the better of me for a moment. I want to something other than in his eyes while he's looking at me. I want to see him acknowledge that I am his mate. I have to get to him somehow. Something has to cut through. "Because I love you? Is that why?"

study him- and yes, there is. A single twitch of his jaw as I step closer to him. Hark gray are wide as he crosses his arms deantly over his chest. His

I nod. "Okay. Fine. You want to learn the hard way, then I'll humor you for now. Endly

I will stay at Bart's"

"I'll take you," he says softly, a sigh of relief escaping him as I lift my backpack and take the handle of the suitcase. So much for being your mate, I guess huh?" I quip as I step toward the front door. "What?" He snaps, the cold crack of his tone causing me to spin back around.

2/3

19:57 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Sixty-Seven

50%

1 glare down my nose at him as best Fan with him being over a head taller than me You heard me. Tadera told me everything. She says I'm your mate. That when you bit me, you marked me as yours,"

His Extech at his sides, his muscles going so tight I feel like I can hear them popping into place. But what he says next steals the breath right from my lungs. "Well, Tedora led to you. You are not my mate. My mate is upstairs, sleeping in my bed." He steps up to my face, his eyes flaring with anger. "You are just some

bitch that I marked "

Chapter Comments

Lori Renner

this chapter has broke my heart and made me cry.

[VIEW ALL 2 COMMENTS](#)

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Sixty-Eight"

DHEAVEN

This

I can't keep the pain set of my woda. "What did you key? da 1 stone at hang tapes is the phant

1 land fallen in love with. My Mond undine op my par

taring down at me with his hands alapest hindi karđi

th; I choke out. The fact is I dont be what i want to be

I had on oval proof that I was his. Aside from what Tadona and a single of me, Dumatic new? said that I was his queen. 'I apologize then. It lose my eyes, cut stop myself. The tears were berming they henry to bold. When I do, I feel their woriness sliding over my cheeks and Lintake a shop locathy which unbuttely grants me a lungful of his scent.

Ka ntr just kome back I worked.

the sound of his voice tinging thuongh my ears. "Just some bitch," I chockle humorlessly.

Opening my eyes with solden fury, I am momentarily stunned by what I see in her the for less than a second pain is etched across

moment he notices me looking, it disappears. There's a nup in my chest where my hart is cracking and search his eyes for any hint that he is lying. Because something is telling me that he is. I know he is. He has to het Mecovie I love fo

Trant believe you," This, thinking of everything I have shard with him. My past, my trauma, my pain. All the things I ever wanted to have to think about again he ripped from me like he had some right to know. As if he was put here on this earth to protect me and now he's past gong to throw me away? "How dare you? I

terch,"After everything you said in me? About wolves and studies! After bring me wont my consent?

This body stiflens, a hand going up in shush me. "Keep your your down! My mate don t how about me yet. The don't know what I

What you are!?! You mean a har?" I laugh, load and unforgiving "Because that is what you

And I dont give a feather of a fuck what the know about you"

my name." I step closer to him, ghting myself when the urge to these my arms around him and he nearly overpowers me. "You once told me that you would never hurt me, his eyes soften and he grits bus teeth but I knew you were lying then just like I know that you're lying now" Wiping my eyes, take a step back. Thunt wery about taking me anywhere. I'll call a ride.

Π

"Habsy? What's going on down there?"

The moment I hear Margo's voice, the blood drains down to my toes. My neck jerks upward and my eyes fall on her sleepy form standing at the top of the stairs. My heart finally takes this moment to disintegrate completely. But it's not because its ht, and it's not because shes in her underwear. Its the single sparkling band that twinkles above her ring finger that does it..

I feel cheated. Cheated out of my secrets, cheated out of this place, and cheated out of him

I would have been just fine if he had left me alone. I could have worked at Bart's forever, blissfully ignorant of all things woll, and been happy as a goddamned cl

H

Then again - Marcus would have eventually shown up and potentially ruined things. But how am I to know that's what would have happened? If I continued living at the bar, maybe one of the other whores would have ended up saving me from him. 'Getting

g married are we?' I hiss. She smirks, nodding her head at me like she's won some kind of prize. I choke, Go back to bed Barbie. I was just leaning"

Then I turn to Domonic and muster up every single moment we had together. I take in his beautifully cut jawline, his deliciously sculpted body, his sparkling siber gaze picture his deep dimpled smile and remind myself of the way it felt to be held by him. To be made love to by him. Everything, I take all of that, and I shove it somewhere deep. Back in the portion of my brain that houses my most painful memories. Then I slam the goddamn door on it, lock it away, and throw away the key.

"Good luck to you, Domonic," I say. "Because mate or no? I will never forgive you for us. Never. From where I'm standing, I can see the muscles of his arms twitch and the wines that fills his eyes glisten, but I don't give a fuck. And FYI. The only bitch in this place is you." Then, just because I can be a truly evil bitch when frustrated to be. I call out, "Make your mother proud."

He tenses, his face filling with blood as his eyes light with anger. Then I turn my back, walk outside, and slam the door behind me to join Emily at the front of the bar. A wave of sadness hits me from every angle as I look into her confined eyes. I don't feel like implaining this shit, really don't

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Eight

"What happened?" She whispers

I shake my head, take out my phone and dial Paul.

He picks up on the first ring. Draven?

"Paul." I sob into the phone. "Can you come and pick us up? We're at Domonic's"

He sighs, and again I sense that he too, knew something was about to happen, just like Pandora did. "Of course. I'll be right there."

When I hang up I notice Emily glaring daggers behind me. Spinning around, I'm more than a little irritated to see Domonic standing there looking cool as a cucumber.

"I told you I would give you a ride."

I snicker, turning back around without bothering to respond to him

"Did you hear me? Draven?"

"Get him to fuck off please," I whisper to Em.

Her eyes flare wide. "What if he attacks me

Ile Fuck it. Ignore that piece of shit then."

Draven Domonic snaps. Tll take you

"We have a ride coming thanks!" Emily informs him icily.

"Draven, Domonic says again, walking up behind me. "You have to understand. I didn't want to hurt you

Atle too late for that I whip around and shove him in the chest with the entire weight of my body. "Do not come near me please. Not now, not ever again."

Funny, his eyes seem so said now. Was it my remark about his mother? I truly hope so I hope I crumpled his tiny black heart. I want him to feel every step that I take away from him. But then again, if Margo truly is his mate, then none of my steps should matter, right? Fucking bastard

"You're pathetic," I hiss. If I really believed that she was your mate, I might forgive you but-

"She is," he sighs.

"Bullshit," I cackle. "You are so full of crap

"It's true," His eyes scramble as if searching for a new lie to add to his pile of Margo nubbish. The full moon shift often reveals our mates to us. I simply didn't know the was mine until last night."

"Oh yrah?" I coo, still not buying. I remember the way he treated her after I arrived here. I remember! Everything he's dying to me is fucking ridiculous and he should fucking know it is" "Put that on your mother's grave," I say coldly.

Finally, he clamps his mouth shut and his eyes grow worried. He doesn't say it and shewhere in the back of my pitiful mind, I'm glad he doesn't. Not because it was out of line which it totally was but because whether I want to admit it or not, I was him to be lying. And although I fully intend to hate him for the rest of my lide - in my heart, Tkapw - Jam his made.

don't want you to hate me. I just want you to be safe. Please, let me-

"Na!" I scream, spittle flying unattractively from my mouth. I refuse to let you doing for me. You're a liar and a coward."

How clenches, his eyes flaring with anger as Paul's bright red jeep rolls to a stop in front of his house. "What is he doing here?"

2/3

19:58 Wed Nov 13 D

Chapter Sixty-Eight

I smile at him, without an ounce of horse as I note the panic in his eyes. I called him to pick up. Then, while Paul gets I take out my phone and offer it to Domenic. Here. You can have this back

"Keep it," he clips out. Grinding his teeth as he watches Paul open the passenger door to me

"I don't want to keep it," I snap.

He stares at me and for a moment I am the Domonic 1 fell in love with Please, I need you to keep the phone!

I nod, sliding it back into my pocket and climbing into the jeep. Rolling down

the pain of his eyes, but then just as quickly it n

we, I glance at him one more time and I mouth the words, Cendly-

Then, we the DWIN.

Lavoid Paul's eyes as we coast down the street. Im

he already knows what's happened. The entire fucking pick probably knees. Not to mention Tandora and

Gale: Which only tells me one thing

Chapter Comments

BroncosGirl66

she should have chucked the phone at his head or smashed it on the ground,

Marietta Gary

[VIEW ALL 4 COMMENTS](#)

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,529 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Sixty-Nine

DRAVEN

"You dont have to stay at the bar Dr, Phal says when we pull into the lot behind the Moonlight Lounge "You can stay with me if you want to

I glance back at Ennily, "Can you take my stuff inside Em? I'll be there in just a moment,"

She nods, her eyes sympathetic. "Sure"

I watch her as she exits the car and drag my things into the back entrance. Then I turn to Paid and plaster a grateful smile onto my face, despite the anger I'm feeling deep down in my bones. That's okay Paul. I'd rather not

He pulls in a sharp breath, nodding like that was the answer he expected. "I understand that you're hurting right now and I can't imagine how you must be feeling. Penah, I still haven't met my mate, but I can't imagine what it would feel like to be rejected by her." My brow furrows, "According to Domenic, I'm not his mate. Margo is."

I chuckles, staring out at the street beyond the bar. "You know that's bullshit, right?"

"Margo Paul ch

Despite my strongest attempt to portray myself as a caneless bitch, his words bring fresh tears to my eyes. "Is it?" I whimper,

He tims to me with a smirk. "Hell yeah it is." He sighs, "I'm not supposed to butt into his business. After all, he is the Alpha of the pack and my best friend. But know him better than anybody does and I promise you this - you are his mate."

do you know that? I screech. Tell me or I'll never speak to you again."

He shrugs. "It was pretty obvious to me right from the start. The insane jealousy, the possessiveness. He marked you!"

I giggle, throwing my head back against the seat. "He literally and You are just so hitch that I marked. That is what he told me, so I wouldn't call that proof."

Paul shakes his head knowingly. "That's because you don't know shit about shifters mates."

"So tell me then. What do I not know?" I glare at him, paying acute

attention to his next words,

"First of all, wolves don't mark just anybody." He glances at me, his gaze serious. "He might have acted like we do, but I swear to you, we don't. For wolf shifters, mates are sacred. They are a once in a lifetime thing. We're not like lions that have been known to have more than one mate- and God knows why that happens. In fact, most shifters only ever have one." He smiles. "And we can't mark just anybody, because our venom is specifically designed to bond us to our partner, making their bodies strong enough to bear our children. Marking just anyone would get them killed. The venom would serve as a poison for them. They would die."

"Wolves can only have babies with only those you have marked?"

Wait, I exclaim, not being able to help but ask this- "So you mean to tell me, you wolves can

He cocks an eyebrow. "We can only reproduce with our mates that we have marked, yes. At least," he sighs-"that's what we were taught growing up."

I groan, frustrated. Then why would he do this? Why would he want me to leave? I don't get it. I don't get him!

Paul laughs. "I think I know what he's doing and it isn't right, but I do understand why he's doing it. He reaches across the center console to squeeze my hand. "Maybe it's for the best."

I jerk away from him. For the best? Really? There is definitely something they aren't telling me, but I'm done trying to figure out what it is. "Well," I snipe. "Unlike wolves, humans can reproduce with whomever the fuck they want to. Mate or not."

Put that in your pipe and smoke it. Domenic.

"I'm sorry now" Paul protests. "Don't go doing anything you know you will regret. Just give him some time to figure things out."

1 nod, "Okay," I say, pretending to agree. Fuck Domonic and his time to figure shit out. As far as I'm concerned, his time is up. He had that bitch Margo in his fucking bed and my mind refuses to forgive it. There's no reason in the world that one could give me that would make such an act acceptable. Thanks for the lift. See you later

1/3

Chapter Sixty-Nine

I get out and march toward the bar hot so much as a backwards glance.

When I step inside I see Emily and Bart deep in conversation in one of the corner booths. The look Bart gives me is so full of pity that I want to curl up and die right there on the spot. I adore Bart, I do, but I've already decided that I'm going to leave. Not only to punish Demonic, but to heal myself. Looking around here all I can see is the first time I entered this place and the man that was seated in the corner booth that Bart and Em are seated in now.

com dit just com

I have plenty of money. A few grand. It buy a ticket and get the fuck on. The only thing left for me here is a whole lot of

of heartache.

"Have a seat Draven," Bart says. "I have an offer for you that might make you feel better."

I snort. I can't imagine bow," But I slide into the booth anyway, clasping my hands in front of me to keep them from trembling

The front door to the bar wings open and I know who it is just by the blush on Emily's cheeks

Koda saunters forward all decked out in his fall sheriff uniform. It occurs to me that this is the first time Emily is seeing him since Boding out that he's a wolf and I study her for any trace of fear, but all I see there is admiration. She is terribly hot for that boy "Hey Draven, Emily" Roda nods, walking up toward the table. He is staring at Emily and for the first time I begin to wonder if maybe there's been a reason for his

along. All the rigns are there, I mean if the few things that I do know about mates is accurate. Could she be his? And if in fact, she is, then why hasn't

Emdy, would you mind giving me a moment to talk to Bart? Maybe, step outside with Roda?"

Toda scowl. To on duty, I just came by to make sure the two of you had somewhere to go."

Strike fucking three. Roda was in on Dom's bullshit too. As if it already know. "Nevermind," I snap, losing my temper. I turn to Emily. "I told you from now on where I go - you go. I'm leaving today All I need to know is if you are coming with me Emily's eyes widen and I notice Koda's body tense. "Of course I am," she says. "I don't have anywhere else to be

Koda hisses, "That's not true. You could work here at the bar and stay here in the apartment upstairs. Like Draven did before..." He cuts off, leaving the sentence to hung-

"Yes," I snap. "Before, being the key word. The now being a different one. Like asshole. Or liar. Maybe even marwhore. That's a pleasant one. Dickhead? I like that

Emily meets my eyes, holding my gaze with her mouth set in a firm line. I'm sticking with Draven. Where she goes, I do."

I smile at her gratefully, pressing back the tears back once again

"Fine," Koda snaps, his jaw clenching 'Suit yourself. I'm glad you're both okay" Then he turns around and leaves as quickly as he came

Douche. He's as bad as his Alpha

"Bart," I say, trying to control my suddenly trembling voice. "I appreciate you. Out of everyone that I met since I got off the train, I trust you the most. So I'm not going to ask you what the fuck is going on, because I know if I do, you'll lie to me Draven, I-

I hold up my hand, cutting him off. "No. I get it. I do. Domonic's the say thanks for everything and-

mayor, blah blah blah, you have no control. Whatever. I no longer give a fuck, I just wanted to

"He wants me to send you to Miami," Bart suddenly bursts out and I gasp.

"Wh-what? How? Why?"

2/3

Chapter Sixty-Nine

Hart groans and leans forward to speed to new apartment. But like you

"I would hate you for it," I him.

"I knew," he sighs. Then with a smooth glance around, he
I sit back and smile my first real smile since
since we arrived back
He grins, "You're in love with
There's another place you can go. Much prettier than this. Somewhere Draven
I study him. Should I trust him? Can I? "And how do I know you won't
think to look for you. Soneber
kinda like I trusted you when you first got here."
His eyes fall sad. "You don't. You'll just have to trust me.
trust me. Kinda
The only way I'm going for this, is if I have your word you'll never tell him where I
He smirks. Whether you believe this or not, Draven, you are my queen. And if you tell
me to keep your secret, your word is as powerful as a promise Chapter Comments

10

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,352 words]

Chapter Seventy

DOMONIC

0425017

I stood there a long time after Paul left. My mind dancing in circles. The new feeling
punching into my chest.

I can hear Margo snoring in my room all the way from the front yard and I decide guest bedroom as soon as possible. I don't give a fuck what deal I made with her. I put only for show, I need whomever's watching to think that she's my mate. But

My dick stands for only one woman. And she just left with Paul.

The very same Paul I will be dealing with later.

wildement, I

Stomping behind the condo I take off my clothes and shift. Leaping over the back window and packhouse. To the place where my mother died. The ruins are still there. Crumbling pile of rubble and stone. We own the never build there again, what used to be a community of Red Wolf Shifters and their families, is now a picture of a ghost town. It is the only place I ever got to speak to my mother. The only place I ever allow myself to grieve. And with Draven pre, I did

Why couldn't I have waited just a day or two? I just want to hold her one last time. Just one

But reath, I know better. If I had done that, I never would've been able to let her go

Draven's cold words tumble through my head as I run and I push harder. Make your mother proud

God, that cut like a knife. A slash straight through my heart. What would my mother have said about what I'm doing! But I know

● be happy. She might even be looking down on me right now and yelling from the heavens.

I know it was one of the lionesses who must have said something and I'm somewhat relieved. Even if Draven really does know that I have good reason to be. At least I hope she does. Then again, she did say she would never forgive me.

I come up on the ruins and do a quick sweep of the area. Sniffing for any foreign scents, but the grounds are untouched. Despite the years and countless rainstorms since that night, I can still smell the rancid aroma of charred flesh. Or maybe, it is just a memory that plays anymore.

I send a painful howl into the sky as I come to halt where the front porch used to be

that it has been

The longer I stand here, the harder it becomes to breathe and I lower the walls around my heart just barely, hoping to feel some sense of Draven through the bond What I do feel nearly cripples me. Her sensations are that strong

Betrayal. Hate. Vergrance. Those are her strongest emotions at the moment. For some reason, that knowledge takes a little of the edge off. I ans I'd rather her be angry than be hurt. But I know, behind all that, there's pain. I felt it when she slammed the door on us. When she was standing in front of me in my living crying. God. Those tears of hers nearly killed me.

And now, standing here, her damning words are all that I can hear in my head.

You're a War and a coward

Fuck. She's right. I am. But what's done is done. All I can do now is prepare for the killer with the trap I'm setting and hope to gain Driven forgiveness when this ia

all over.

I hated lying to her and I hate that she has to leave. Especially without hearing what wished that I could say to her

Because I love you?"

My wolf whines, the pain becoming nearly impossible to block and again I howl. The evergreen trees around me loom like a shadow of

I'm so sorry, baby. I love you too.

1/3

Chapter Seventy

DRAVEN

With one last look at Boat the hand from the window of the train I allow one fear one to roll bot and steady from my yrs. Thank God the sky in rear today The dog seems to have vanished withi atram. But still, the beauty of this place still peright heavily on my heart with every mile north we take. I gleter down

cof the city Hart wrote doen for me and wonder Type of village it will be. Why is he no nues that 110 loom it there? I guess we'll see. At least on the

Gazing at Emily who sits on the seat next to me, I notice she is rubbing her chest and taking deep breathes as if she's in some kind of pain. "What's the matter, Am?"

Her dark eyes shoot toward mine and I notice for the first time that they're slightly wet with tears. Nothing's the right. "I wish with I had a chance to say goodbye to him. "Yeah. I'm sorry about that, but I had a chance of him tailing the installation w

when we're supposed to be landing on a plane."

"I know. Her lip purse and she gasps out the window. He didn't want me anyway. He said that I disgusted him anyway. It's not like he'll miss me. I need to just get

I shake my head. What the hell is wrong with these wolves? I know Koda is disgusted with her. I know it. And I'm willing to be the entire reason Koda beat up Quinn that day was because Quinn had developed a little bit of a crush on Emily. I'd bet money on it, "You don't disgust him, Em." I whisper. He's just a big fat pig."

She chuckles, smiling for the first time since we left. "Well, this is kind of exciting. And it's nice to have a partner for once."

I grin. "It's sure as fuck in"

Pulling the pouch of my backpack, I think of the ten thousand dollars Bart sent us off with. At first, I refused it, not wanting to accept any of what Domenic was trying to provide for me to leave. But then Bart showed me that it was actually coming out of his personal safe and I accepted it. Promising to call him once a month. Am I really going to? I don't know if I will. Because even within the space of few hours, my mind has been whirling with questions about Domenic and the aching of my chest has only gotten worse. Even the bite mark along my neck seems to be throbbing. I know if I call Bart at all, I be too tempted to ask about the bastard

Still, I can't help but wonder what Domenic did right after I left. Despite that I promised myself that I was no longer allowed to care. After a month or so my curiosity might get the better of me. Which is why I slid my cell phone out of my pocket and left it under the bar. This way, none of them can contact me. The phone numbers I need, I have plugged into my brain. I will get myself a new phone if I need one once Emily and I have found a place to settle into. "What's the name of the town again?" Emily asks.

I sigh. "Something French," I gaze down at the scrap of paper again and say, "Village du Loup Rouge."

"Hmm, Emily murmurs. "I wonder what it

Not sure. Rouge means red and that's about all I know?"

"Guess we can ask around when we get there. Hope they speak English."

"Me too," I say, just as my neck starts to throb again. I rub my fingers over the bite mark, trying to soothe the pain. Something tell me, it's going to get worse before it gets better. "How long before we get there?"

"Three hours," I say, remembering what Bart then to the villige."

Ooh! Crown Mountain Sounds pretty."

rt told me. According to Bart, we'll have to hire a cab from the Vancouver Station that will take us to Crown Mountain and

"Sounds remete!" I laugh.

Just then, the passenger in front of me turns around. He smiles, the blue of his eyes rankling. "Did you say

y you were headed to Crown Mountain?

I study him. He's older, but still exceptionally handsome. His dark brown hair is clean cut and his beard is artfully trimmed. He looks to be maybe ten years older

2/3

-

Willage of W

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,049 words]

Chapter Seventy-One DOMONIC

After four solid hours of Mango trying to seshice me, I'm ready to hang myself. By the time she's dressed for her shift at the club, I'm more than thrilled to take her there. Especially after checking the locator app on my phone and finding out that Draven is still here. I checked about thirty minutes ago, expecting to see her hallway to Mam by now. But according to the app when she and Paul left my house they went directly to the bar and that is where she stayed. The aching in my thest has trained to my fangs and each time I draw in a breath the pain gets worse. So all I can think when I see that little dot on the map pulsing over the Moonlight Lounge, is Thank God

I drop Margo off at the club and head straight to the bar to find tell and Koda sitting at the corner booth when I walk in. Other than the two of them, the place is completely empty and oddly enough... I can't see Dren

Texas Dom," Bartlett hisses. "You look like shit."

hasn't even been a whole night yet and already I have dark circles under my eyes. I growl, "Where is she?"

I know I do. It ha

"What do you mean?" Bartlett chuckles. She left for Miami. 1 book ber to the airport sell

I shake my head. "No, you didn't." Then I walk up to the table and flip my phone around so the pair of them can get a real good look at the map and the little blue - GPS dat themselves. "This says she's here. You're lying to me. She never left." II "Yes she did." Bartlett insists. Shaking his head, he hisses, "You've been spying on hef?"

course I have

Ind. "Of course

"Sicko," Bartlett spes "You better update your software them, because I promise you, she's gone."

My eyes float toward Kods and I notice the strain in his muscles as his angry gaze focuses on the wall behind me. He's pissed about more than he's letting on, that much I know. But right at this moment, I could give a rat fuck what it is

"Oh really?" I kiss, thinking that somehow Bartlett has managed to mask her sont from me. I dial Draven's number and listen for it to ring. When it does, my body poes cold. I to the counter and leap behind the bar.

There, just below the cash argister is Draven's phone and half of my plan to keep tabs on her dies a swift death.

She left

"Fuck!" I shout, pounding the top of the bar with a closed Est. 1 glare at Bartlett. "Were you behind this?" I snap. "You said you took her to the airport! Did you give her the money and the tickets?"

He noch. 'Of course I did." His face is a mixture of sadness and fatigue as he studies me. "She left her phone here?"

"She did." I answered quietly. Then turning to Koda I say, "Call the airport and find out if she got on the plane."

He nods. "I'll have to drive down there to show them my badge. They won't tell me anything over the phone."

"Well then go," I snapped

He pushes away from the booth angrily, shaking his head at me as he stalks my way have a feeling that if she left her phone here she

I dont give a fuck about what you're feeling Roda. I give a fuck about her. Go to the airport now!"

He clenches his jaw, his eyes lighting with blue fire. This is your fault asshole. Not me," he growls out stepping toward the exit.

"Fuck you!" I shout at his back as he leaves. I liked him better when he didn't talk," say, dropping myself into the booth in front of Bartlett and running my hands over my chest to ease the throbbing. "Fuck this hurts!" This is what you wanted" Bartlett inform me with a smick. "So enjoy your pain."

1/3

Chapter Seventy One

part how murything tow that dar

wing met There

Jour wide as my chest. To us, ber? Those are

slation 1 pom_nishing my chest yet again. Fuck it forts

fers lie the damn thing as Deeding"

vit plej must have enduner he duckies. And we called them wrak

was going to dajet lie this - be this strong

Be, shall come back because of

sissy temper. "The fucked up port is when I came in here

thinking she wa

He gone, taking has beetles of jack down from the

Taking a keg karting

I kehusky shooting up onto my shit. I fucked up his to myself more th
than an

Rastatt laughs, exzeling as he tak

he takes another drink. "kup

(or two. I hare a feeling she'll be making contact around then."

can turn the sign and start up the stereo system.

"talking like you know something," I say acc

(when the Ent patrons roll into the bar and he gets right to work. I'll have to wait. I'll

prit hum tonight, aber dong If I'm still fee

commeter of Draren behind the ro

counter looking sexy as hell and collecting phone numbers. I can still remember the way
locked when I asked her for them. Then ben rage when she realized I had stolen them
from her room Fuck. I can still smell her. But I know I laughing it Ins my head. She's not
here. Shes not So I twist the cap loose on the other bottle and down that one too.

of go to kart. I go to Miami and watch her until the aching in my chest go

i what Bartlett augomsted and tell her everything. Then maybe she'll understand why I
did what I did and she'll let me hold her again before I leane. She can phone back and I
can call her idenever I want to. Yeah, plat's what I do. I smile at that thought until I hear
one of the customers at the bar speaking to

lappened to that rode lerle Kartender you had? Haven't seen her

arkettle and de right here in the booth.

Lowe Koda peta so the airport

At this point I am sufficiently drunk and preparing to hop on a plane to

19:58 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Seventy-One

However, what he has to say smashes that plan and I shatter the neck of the bottle i

"Dom," Roda's voice is full of dread. She never got on the dam plone. She didn't i

Eve really lost her

Chapter Comments

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,236 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Seventy-Two

Getting off the train and stepping out into a large city so different from Miami is a blue experience for me. I was used to high rise buildings that lined the beach. but this was altogether different. No kandy shees here. No palm trees either, just wonderful autumn leaves against a backdrop of gorgely spiked mountains. The new of it all is so breathtaking, for a moment I don't feel the ache in my neck.

"Til letch my car and meet you both in the front of the station Gabriel says,

Ling into the wash of people heating toward the parking lot.

Emily and I nod as we proceed to step

tep outdoors into the crisp fall air. " you sure that Emily asks as we wait near the rub marked for Pick Up

"No, I admit, thinking of the handsome new acquaintance we won the train. But hom the same town we're heading to and he said he knows a place we can

"What if it with him?" She remarks playing with the sleeves of Koda's eater. I had most forgotten that she had nothing to her name. She was still wearing the same pestkult she'd been wearing for the last two days.

1 doubt that's what he meant. I chuckle, wonder if we can get him to stop at one of these boutiques on the way there. We need to get you some clothes."

But I don't have any money," Emily protests. And besides, I'm not ready to take Koda's water off"

*I concede. "You can share my clothes until we can figure a way around town and buy your own. And don't worry about money. What I have - you have," you dare argue."

She gives me carefree smile. "Alright. I won't

"Look"" I say, pointing toward the line of cars heading out of the packing structure. Think that's him"

He's really handsome,"

"He is too handsome.

"What if he be a serial killer?"

Then thank God there's two of us." I grin. "We'll just have to have each other's back

The ride to the Village of the Ard Way is quiet for the most part. The only sounds coming from Emily and me as we marvel over the beauty of the landscape. Gabriel

sits quietly until we make our way out of the city and onto the open mountain road. That's when he decides it is time to get masy

"So what brings the two of you out to the mountains without anywhere to stay?" He asks as we turn onto a barely paved road lined with boulders and giant

Trusting Emily to remain quiet I answer him myself. I'm punishing my boyfriend. Not a beemmy. But it's certainly not the truth.

"Boyfriend?" Gabriel's voice rings of disappointment and I smile to myself knowing statement had the desired effect.

This way he knows not to hit on me and at the same time just on the off chance that he is in fact a serial killer-he'll think there's someone out there that misses me. Which of course, there isn't "I should have known a gorgeous girl like you would have a bean."

Immort. A brand Brally! Who talk that?

"So this place you were telling us about," I saying the conversation toward something I do want to discuss. "Is a shelter, or an apartment complex? A house?"

1/3

19:58 Wed Nov 13

Chapter Seventy-Two

DOMONY

distinct impression tha

to a mockery keking brides

kun, trumen Who sent pas this way? I mean where did you get the

derided this is the way we were headed."

cept everyone. So if what you're saying is true, you should tell me one so that I can

irmie sably tense in the keys toward him he puts the car just before the bridge. What do

arching for the truth before freezing on the mark along my neck. He loses his smile, and allows thickly. "Nevermind. I'm

for the night. Then tomorrow, you can meet everyone and decide if you still want to stay."

harvest moved an inch since then abemson. I've been here at the bar for hours Wallowing in my misery and drinking bottle after d been. I'm drink an fark and past the thought of sering Marga tonuit makes me want to seth something bottle of

atomic? What if that bastard is

somewhere made me. I know he's not. I don't know how I know, but I do. This rem putting on trying to paint Margo as my mate, its not going to work. (realized this. Actually, fight have idd know when I decided on this plan that the hiller was a wolf Because I refuse to mark Marzo, and I'm not going to fork ben. Minking he wouldnt do a damn thing for her anyway, except maybe kill her. But Driven didn't know that when I led through my teeth and told

with that lie was immense Like buming through my veins when 1 uid it. There were so many signs telling me that what I was doing was

1. I should keep her here and protect her one But I did not because I am an idiot

the hurt she's been through. Everything her stepfather did to her and everything Les tried to do to her...I pushed her away like she wasn't shit. She shared darkest memories with the and pulsed all over them by sending her away.

uter torment. My chest is ponding abnormally and my fangs feel like they've been ripped from my mouth. And now? just five hours after she's been gone, I am The liquor only helps enough to dull the ache. The memories of her are still there

"gonna sleep hares through my brain dog as he eats himself across from me in the booth.

the nest of my been. I no longer give a a fuck where I sleep, if I can sleep at all

"used this uplet gros know your heart was in the right plane, but

should have known better. Your problem is you think you're invincible."

Toow I'm not invincible dickhead What I didn't know-was how to protect my girl gh, dropping my face my hand. "I just wanted her somewhere safe Now don't have any fucking idea where she i

1 door swings open and Koda stomps inside. "Any news?"

To asshole. Unless you count my being the world record for bottles of whiskey downed i

1" 1 peer at him with unsteady eyes. "Dil you catch her seent

Fiss terti deck, his eyes falling on Bartlett "Actually,

My body jerks and right way I notice Bartlett Lense I the meat across from me.

here to discuss with Bartlett,"

2/3

19:58 Wed, Nov

Chapter Seventy-Two

"Really?" Ranlett shrugs, "Why is that?"

Keda glares at him, his hand on his gun holster, "Because you say you dropped them at the airport, Bartlett, but thats not where I read a fer vent

Bartlett's threat bobs and he crosses his as in front of his chest in defiance

"You caught their scent?" I hiss, shooting to my feet. "Where

Finally, he faces me. At the train station. Headed up

p the northern tracks."

I tam toward Bartlett, my fangs slicing out as I grow. "You lied. You fucking fir to me

1. d. Then he stands, taking me in from head to tot because they left on the train instead of

Bartlett lowers his head, "Yeah, I did. where they went.

I pound my fon into

o the table. "I am your fucking Alpha! I growl, my muscles thing, expanding, preparing to shift. "You know something. I'd bet my

He shrugs. "I don't know shit."

I rip off my

shirt and head toward the back of the bar. "Outside Bartlett. We settle the right now."

Chapter Comments

8

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,470 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Seventy-Three

DOMINIC

@150%1

My chest was heaving. Bartlett was bleeding. Yet still, he continues to lie to me.

Glaring at where he lay on the ground at my feet, Ilias, "This can stop, you know, You only have to tell me where they went."

A crowd of onlooker had formed around us. Mostly pack members, but a few of them here shop owners who had stayed to work late and heard the commotion from inside

their stores. They remained silently, watching. Uheless as I beat Bartlett into the ground. The presence of two of the city's deputies didn't seem to matter to amyrne, least of all me. No one was going to stop this, they knew it and I knew it. Su Bartlett got off one or two punches, but I let him have those. They served to push at my anger. Making me wilder, stronger, and taking the edge off the crushing abjus forming in my chest.

"You can kill me if you want Bartlett shouted from the ground, spitting blood out of the side of his mouth as he did. "Because I can't tell you what I don't know

I chuckle and kick him swiftly in the ribs. "As you wish

"Dom," Koda lets out rooly. He meets my gaze, stepping forward with a hand raised. "He's had enough. We should go to the main station and see what we can find

I nod, stepping back, and away from my one trusted friend on the ground. "We'll talk about this later. Then I kneel, bringing my mouth as close as possible to him 10 that what I say is not overheard by the humans spectating. "You better stay home for a week. Il have someone else take over the bar. There are too many witnesses tonight." Then I growl, "And I swear to God, if something happens to her and I find out you've been lying to me..."

I let that hang as I followed Koda back into the bar to retrieve my shirt and wash my hand. "Let's go," I tell him as the pair of un ran back nutside and climb into his SUV Im assuming you're off duty."

Be nods, screeching out of the parking lot and leaving a cloud of dust and asphalt injur wake. "We need to find out what train they rode out on and then check every city they might have stopped in."

I chuckle, studying him as his deftly maneuvers through the shadowed streets of Port Orchard. So devoted. Any particular reason why?"

He clenches his teeth, his jaw going tight. "No."

"And now you're lying."

"I am," he admits.

Then it occurs to me. He stood between Emily and me when I attacked her at the padhouse. When he did, he looked angry enough to kill me. He's been more you lately. Koda has never been much of talker and until just recently, has been the very best at following unders. Accordingly to him, he met Emily long before the rest of us did. He even allowed her to take his room.

"Something tells me I'm not the only one with chest pains," I mumble.

He glares out at the night as we pull into the train station. "You're not."

She's his mate. Emily, is his me

I nod, shifting in my seat as I roll down the window and Draven's heavenly scent dangles just above the senses. "Gad. She was here." I growl. "Bartlett knows where they went. I know he does." "Koda shrugs, pulling into one of the many vacant spaces of the parking lot. "Probably, but whatever you did to Braten in keeping him silent."

"To one here, I stop. "This station closes at Five. I assume we are breaking to the main office."

Absolutely," he is,

Then as we eat his SUV and walk confidently toward the office, I breathe. "Do you that? This

He shakes his head, "T

H01/3

Chapter Seventy-Three

"No" I go. It's very faint, just a tinge is there. I'm an Alpha and an Alpha pinpoints Frunget senses then the rest of the pack to a shock that be

honestly can't melt it. A wolf. And it's not you and it's not Ballent

He tenses, "The killer?"

I shake my head. "I don't think so, but the scent is mildly similar to the one we followed from the dungeons, but not exactly the same." I jerk my head toward the office. "Let's get in there." "Maybe there's more than one," Koda mumbles softly.

"But it doesn't make sense that a wolf started the fire. He would have shifted, like we had to."

"Right," Koda says, before pulling a mini crowbar out of his back pocket and popping the door off its hinges. "Let's be quick."

DRAVEN

It's well after two in the morning when I jolt upright in bed at the Red Wolf Lodge. A wolf was howling somewhere in the distance, and I'm sure that's what woke me. Not that I was sleeping very well anyway, with the throbbing pain in my neck. When we arrived in town a few hours ago, Gabriel insisted we stay at his house, but really didn't want to. So I

declined, promising to see him in the morning so that he could take us further into town and we could meet the elders. Apparently anyone seeking refuge in this place must meet a certain criteria, and the only reason why I didn't decide to have him take us back to Vancouver is because I was truly curious what that criteria was.

And riders? Really? What the hell were you thinking Bart!

But Bart did say this was a place Domonic refused to go and given the name of the town, I was extremely confused. I have to find out what it is about this place that keeps him away and I'm betting one of these Elders' may have that answer for me Domonic.

Just thinking of him was bringing fresh pains to my chest. Tears fill my eyes and after making sure that Emily is fast asleep in the bed next to me, I choose to let them fill.

He was supposed to be my protector.

Everything seemed to change after I told him that I love him. Guess that was a bad move. But none of it mattered anymore. He didn't want me. So I will do my very best to move on without him. And where I come from sometimes it is easier to do by hopping into someone else's bed. Sure, it wasn't right and ultimately it didn't help you heal, but it sure made you feel better. Gabriel wasn't a bad looking guy and could tell he was into me. Maybe I'll use him.

"Oh come on Draven, I sold myself. "Are you for real?"

Are you really going to whore porn just to get revenge? The answer to that question is alarming. Because, yes, I just might.

Crabbing one of the card boys off the table and slipping my sweatpants on, I step outside to inhale the crisp mountain air. It's beautiful out here. I can hear mer my left and birds on my right. The trees are taller than the ones in Port Orchard and the landscape is infinitely darker with the absence of anellumps. Leaning on the railing I don't even hear him when he walks up.

"Hello young lady," a voice sounds to my left.

I startle, jumping back toward the motel room door and placing my hand on the handle, "H-HL"

The man before me is immaculately dressed. His graying hair is clipped short and his eyes are a shadowed gray. "Are you alone here?"

berse, pulling out my card key and unlocking the door. "No. I'm not and it's late. So heading inside.

The man nods, taking a deep pull of a cigarette before expelling the smoke slowly. "I didn't mean to frighten you. I saw you from the street."

You come all the way up here from the street to back me? Oh hell and

2/3

Chapter Seventy-Three

My eyes man the road

and new cars. Are you staying in the model town

kicking myself for not buying a house in Vancouver. And if you had me

live in the village. But sometimes I like to take walks at night. Especially after a full moon" I tosses his cigarette. "I didn't

mean to frighten you. It's hot." he pouts to inhale deeply. "I thought you were someone else."

something in

the

falls and has me stepping forward. "Who

He shakes his head. His eyes scan

falling toward my neck and locking there for

1 minute before lifting to meet my gaze. "My son."

I jerk in surprise. "The never been mistaken for a male before, I chuckle, "How old are you?"

He smiles. "Young. A few years older than you."

"OK" Okay sir, either your son is incredibly skinny or I've gained more than a few pounds. Sorry to disappoint you."

Not disappointed," he whispers, "Just curious.

him, because I'm stupid and can't remember that you should never talk to strangers,

"Curious....." He grins. About that mark on your neck? And who might have given it to you."

Chapter Comments

10

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[896 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Seventy-Four

DRAVEN

My body freezes, my hand flying up to cover my neck reflexively. Is he staring at the ou my week? He is "Who are you?"

Baret Where the he did you send me

The man bows slightly, I believe you have an idea what I am, if not who."

I shiver as I take a step back Are you I cut off. Not sure if I should voice what I thinking. What if I'm wrong and he's just some average Joe weirdo out to cause a little trouble? I don't want to give him any reason to think that fait pub

He laughs, his eyes twinkling with a familiar silver sparkle. "A what? Go on, you can it. No end to be shy. The name of this place says it all."

He's taunting me, the bastard. I swallow thickly. "Are you a wolf?"

He nods, his smile lessening, becoming more of a concerned frowns. The man who gave that mark to you is that who you are running from?"

So he is a wolf. A shifter. Like Donosic. That means, Gabriel is probably one too. "What makes you think that I'm running?" I ask, crossing my arms defiantly over my

"Gabriel may have mentioned something." he says softly.

Gabriel. Of course. So much for hopping into bed with that idiot.

"Aha. So you know Gabriel," I say stupidly coming away from the door to noce again lean on the railing. "What a big mouth he has I say, semi-quoting the classic Lile Red Riding Hood

"That he does" the man says. "But you mustn't blame him. It's his job to report on any and every newcomer that comes into these parts. We are a

"closed community." I finished for him, rolling my eyes. "Yeah. I know. He told us."

"You never answered my question," he prompts, eyeing my neck once again.

I close my eyes, maybe not the smartest thing to do around on unfamiliar wolf, but is fuming that I'm not the sharpest tool in the shed when it comes to these shifters. "Yes," I answer softly, a fresh pang thrumming in my chest. "But it's what he wanted, not what I did." He gasps. "I see."

Tears begin a trail from my eyes and I growl in frustration as I wipe them away. "I don't want to talk about him." I gaze at the stranger and something about his face is suddenly so comforting that I nearly reach out to hug him. Kick back Dren, don't be all your marbles "I'm so sorry," he says with a sorrowful shake of his head. "Perhaps in a couple of days you'll feel differently

I chuckle. "I doubt it I quip. "Besides, I don't even know if we'll get to stay here. Gabel says that we have to be approved by some Elders before we can stay."

That's true, he remarks, but then winks. "But something tells me you and your human companion will gain the admission you seek.

I cock

head at him with a quirk of my Lps. How would you know that?"

He grins, tips sugtching into a knowing smile. "Let's just say my word is gold adhere and at least, you've got my vote,"

You're on the Elder Council, I accuse playfully.

He doesn't confirm it, but I can see it in the twinkle of his gaze. Test so happens thegs a freshly renovated collage that stands right next to my own. Nothing too fancy. Big enough for a small family, I see no reason why you and your companion can't settle in there." I raise a brow, "What's the rent like?s

1/3

1958 Wed, Nov 13

Chapter Seventy-Four

He smiles a wide dimpled grin before taking a couple of steps back. "You'll find out
je tims around and starts down the sidewalk leading into the woods.

"Want I shood, Where are you
ere are you going? You didst give me your name!"

But he doesn't answer me. Instead he continues his path into the woods disappearing
behind trees that are black as anned at the silence of the trees, I gr back inside and
slide the bolt on the door.

Tin shivering, my body is trembling. I need to know more about these dann shifters and
their bites and it soms ve landed in the place who

Hopefully I can get. Mister Elder Manor Gabriel to get sie a cell phone. Then I can call
Tedora and see what the can tell me about what could call Bart, but it's much too soon
for that. I don't want to do that unless it's blutely neonisury.

Why? Why do you need to know what Dorroosie is up to? To dont need to know
anything about that asshole. Nothing at all

But.... I miss him so much. I just need to know if he maybe he kind of sort of even alle
bit feels that he made and perhaps perchance That's all I want to know and that's all I
ask for.

"I am such an idiot." I snap at myself, before tumbling back into bed to stare at the
celling for the rest of the night. "Maybe I just shout' ve

DOMONIC

There are four trains that head north coming out of this station. Holding the schedule in
my hand I note that one beads toward Quebec and

the list Coast. The remaining one stops in Vancouver before heading through to Alai.
The Alaska train and the New York train are the only mains that left v the timeframe.
"Fuck," I hiss, dro

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,297 words]

Chapter Seventy-Five

DRAVEN

showed and ready to go before the

tags and pours its molten honey an tank top when Gabriel roll up in his dark gray

"Hello gorgeous," he says. "Where's your friend?"

sile, tilting my head toward the room we stayed in. "She's getting dressed

I smile,

hen the door opens and Emody nuts looking absolutely dazzling in while at her and she does a little spice, I winking at her as we all pebre

e jeans and a fitted Mack sweater. She's a lot cater dressed the a pet. I

And not just any arms, Donsonic's

the smell of pine and citrus in my nose. I needed it as badly that I mind most of the night. It hurt to think that Dompeir was probably in bed with that sharp fan Harbor. It was killing me to imagine he was holding lest night instead of me. That he chose to keep her instead of me. God, please take this pain away. Please. Or st

her

ripth mough, I don't feel as tired as I should. The throbbing in my neck and che

do you guys have out bere?" I ask as we set out on

to be lessened a bit. Either that, Lappeers to be a freshly paned mad just behind the mood.

ed to the

He chuck)

"The usual small town munhem

couple of stoers, a parket, a school. Town hall. That sort of thing

[phone shops then I complain quietly

He laught. "Th, not exactly. But if

one, one of the elders will accommodate you. That is of
provided you are approved for

"Sanctuary" I righ. Is that what this it? Is that what I'm doing here? Staying safe from
Domonic? I shake my head to clear the ages of 1

vants my head space. I am not going to let you in my morning broken heart! Notter how
much I want that bastard

Sure, I could lie to myself some more. Tell myself that maybe Margo really is his mate
and that it's only right that I let him go. I mean he did say that I could stay

bene with him wrdd be eliminated the threat. What he didn't realior was that if I thought
for minute that he could send me yli would ne

him. I never would have let him touch me. I could try and give him for doing exactly what
he said he would do from the start if I wanted t

chim Breven. So lifetime of pain, here I come, because I'm just that stubborn.

A sign looms up ahead painted in red and white. It hangs upon an enormous back wall
that disappears into the trees on both sides of the rout Loup Rouge in painted in maroon
letteting and a wrought iron fence opens as we approach. Whoa. Emily says from the
set behind me.

When you said closed community, I didnt real you met dosed community," 1, gaping at
the warmed that stand on each side of the dorsed head to toe in black gear. I can't even
see their faces because they're wearing some sort of mask that only allows for their
noses and eyes to uncovered. They're garbed kind of like I would imagine Special
Forces to be dressed. "Are you sure this is a town and not a prison?"

Gabriel Laughs. Tas are. The guards are here for our protection"

"I see," Treply. Watching the soldiers eyes as we drive past. The pair of them are
staring at me with acute apprehension, Alestit as if they assume 11 bei Stranorly
moved, it's not an unpleasant feeling it almost makes me want to smile at them. sue.
They atte

As we roll further in the trees heronse sparse and buildings begin to come into view, it
kind of looks like a college campus on each side of us. With people shout, walking from
one danction to the other. Most of them are male, but I tch a pimpse of a few females
here and there. Not many though. That alone for a bet of panor, but I dont let it get to
me

stray building built entirely of white brick. The sign on the front of the building reads. Town Hall.

"Shall we? Gabriel asks, cutting off the engine and unlocking the doors. His twinkling, blue eyes fall over my body in an effort to take you to task. Regardless of what the outcome

is. "After your meeting, I'd

stare at him for a moment before reminding myself that I need to get over. That'd be lovely," I say, biting my lip and turning on the charm. Pick Drimea, really? Are we going there? Yes, son of a bitch, so that the bell up.

1/2

Chapter Seventy-Five

"Perfect," he says with a lick of his pimp lips. His beard is freshly trimmed and his hair styled immaculately. He truly is handsome.

Three of us enter the building and right away I'm struck stupid by the modern decor. It looks a lot like the packhouse in Port Charles. Blacks, grays, and soft blue track lighting. Maybe it's well thought of?

Gabriel points us toward a set of double doors. "Go right through there. The council is ready waiting for you. They'll be out here waiting."

"You're not coming in?" I ask, only mildly concerned. I mean, what if he only really thought where so that we could become lunch? I never did ask Dominic of Wolfshers over at Aurans. I really should have asked that

"I'm not allowed. This is a private hearing, but I promise, you'll be safe." He grins, placing a hand super low on my back-like creasing on my ass kind of love. "If there's any trouble, just say my name and I'll burst through the doors and carry you off," he whispers, his mouth on the shell of my ear.

Oh yeah. He definitely wants me

I turn to face him and allow myself a slow, sickly sweet smile. "Promise?"

His jaw clenches, hot climbing into his eyes. "Promise."

I nod, then turning away from him I take Emily's hand and the two of us enter the large room. The doors close behind us with a definitive thud. Twelve men sit on one side of a long cherrywood table. The kind of table you would imagine they use in board meetings or jury deliberations. One of the twelve men stands and I recognize him immediately.

He is the stranger from last night, and now, in the sunlight, I note that his hair isn't all gray. Most of it is a startlingly familiar shade of red-brown. He is smiling at me as are the rest of them. It's creepy as hell.

"Miss Draven," the man says. "My name is Adam. I am the acting Alpha while my son is away?"

His son? So his son is the Alpha of this place? Or pack? Or whatever?

A soft chuckle floats through the crowd causing Adam to glance in both directions. "Gentleman," he scolds before turning his attention back to me. "Would you and your companion please have a seat?"

I grip Emily's hand harder and we both take a seat on the opposite side of the table in the two chairs obviously present just for us. "Nice to meet you."

Adam smiles. "I have already given my approval to the rest of the council and all that is left is for them to vote."

I gasp "What Really? You don't want to ask me any questions first?" What kind of hearing is this?

The man on the very end smiles wanly. All we really needed was to see you and, sort you for ourselves. Now that we have, all questions we may have asked, have

"Scent me?" I glare at him.

The man grins. He too is older, his hair a graying blonde. Deep blue eyes crinkle when he smiles at me next and I'm feeling a sense of déjà vu. "Yes, You carry the Red Wolf Scent" He chuckles. "Or rather the scent of our Alpha, Which tells us, that you...are his mate." Chapter Comments

10

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter Seventy-Six

DOMONIC

ONE MONTH LATER

"Brinier's back from his little quest," says Bartlett, "Did he call you?"

I shake my head, my por falling armed the quiet of the bat. It's wintertime

to slow down around this time, but I can't help but think there's a different feat

It helps with the mending ache in my chest if I block out all memmy of... hangover. I stops the room from spinning out of petrol

I'm sure he would have if he'd found anything" Bartlett say with a shake of his heal

I place has chimped semely. Sure, its not unusual for things

The altogether pitiful atmosphere. However, I wont think about her. Lefse to

Bartlett has been quietet these days. He wanders this place in a perpetual state of lancholy. It seems, he's missing her the same as the rest of our pick it, like me. I don't miss her. I thirst for her. Teyi waking berwih is a moment of renewed pain. Like a bleeding hole in my chest, I die a little every minute Em awake thless I manage to create a distraction for musell. Which bus Loften: Most of the time, I lift weights for hours in what was once the spare bedroom of my house Punishing mywell until my arms are about to crack. I work myself into a straight jacket of pain forcing the thumbing in my chest mat teeth to blend into the fatigue that meets every mode. And because Im a shifter, it takes a lot of reps. Its the only reping mechanism I've been able to come up with. Éspecially after our initial search didn't yield any results. That was the worst time, I felt like a poddamned cokehead with my nose to shattered glass for the first couple of weeks she was gone. Shilling and scraping for any residual dust that may have been left behind.

A month ago, I would have bet my fangs that Bartlett knew where she went. Or at least, that he was in contact with her. But I've been watching him, Every day and every night. I don't even go to my club anymore. James has been in charge of the plate. During our full moon shift a few days ago, I had hoped to catch a sort following the tracks to the northeast, but nothing. Not a damn thing. Unless you count the appearance of a new den of bear shifters in the Selkirk Mountains, which I don't because-well-they're bears. They mostly keep to themselves. We don't have any stake in the Selkirk Mountains so it don't matter anyway.

- Sometimes, very seldom, La

whatever bullshit to myself to fantasize that she's aching for me as much as I am for her. I pretend that she's looking at the sky above Port Orchard from

T

sin, and sending me kisses so that I know that she still calles. That she still... loves.

But, it's bullshit, because she's still gone.

"I hate her," I lied. Taking a swig from a bottle of Jack. Oh yeah, and that's the other thing I'm also drunk for seventy-five percent of my day.

"You hate her? A familiar voice sounds on my left. "I'm pretty sure it's you, you hate

My eyes wander upward, bearing reluctantly from the bottle on the table in front of me. "Gryffin," I chuckle. Damn it. He looks almost as hollow as I do. He takes a seat in front of me and grabs the bottle, downing half of it in one pull. How the fuck did he get in here without my noticing? I sniff the air lightly. Shit, he's losing his lion. He smells like a fucking human. "I take that to mean that you still haven't shifted."

His eyes darken, banking from gold to raw amber. "Nope."

"Holy shit," I hiss

THE

grits his teeth. "I think you were right about the venom. Taking another drink, hands cross the table. I need to find a mate

Intense. "I guess whatever the good doctor took couldn't be found then?"

He shakes his head. "Not a trace. It's weird really. Because, by the time Tardora waste to get back to the cabin, the damn place had been cleaned out. Nothing was "Who do you think-

He raises a hand, cutting me off. "A cleaning company that she uses for all the properties was in and out before we could stop them. I know what you were thinking.

I was hoping for the same thing. But all that she could scent was humans. Plural,"

"Huh," I choke gut. "That's fucked."

"Yeah," he sighs. "But it does make me feel a bit better saving that you're just as miserable."

1/3

Chapter Seventy-Six

I laugh for the first time

checking for prying eyes? We've been online for weeks. Searching every avenue I can think of in fin

there. Someone else has to be doing the same kind of work"

My bar "Makes sense. Find anything

"Tandora thinks she did." He sighs, Jining back against the seat. "Some place in Vardhaner. She been taking weekly trips up there to check it out."

My hand stills mid reach for the bottle and suddenly I am stone cold be. My arms back and may from the whiskey Tandora, huh? Weekly you may What is

Tout," he say "She just got back again last night."

Ts t

that righ

"Is taking her multiple trips? hint to check out a

Apparently, it's a difficult spot të get to

mewhere in the mountains. She Joan't been able to get close enough yet to see things not properly"

Majhe And

I cench my teeth, my mind suddenly whirling as I remember Deaven's words. Tardor told me. Could they have gotten that close? In one fucking night? Sta you believe that shit? She's a focking lion shitter for crying out loud."

He smiles, reaching for the bottle and downing the rest before laughing to himself. His dark eyes twinkle as he winks my way. "Exactly."

DRAVEN

1 race toward the restroom the moment I get home. The scent of whatever Emily's cooking in the kitchen sending my tummy into spasms. What the fuck? Imping to be sick, I just know it. "Jesus, what are you cooking?" I shout as I tumble to my knees in front of the ivory throne and puke my silly little guts out.

As I retch, I hear her walking up the hallway. "What do you mean? I'm cooking dinner. Catfish," she says as she rounds the corner and Ends me with the toilet like it's my lost lover.

Catfish? Fucking cash? But I love catfish. At least, I used to. But it seems just the word is enough to send my belly rolling yet again. "Oh my God, I choke out, a fresh wave of nausea causing me to heave. What the fuck?"

Draveti! Shit!" She coos, kneeling down to stroke my back. "Are

you

I shake my head as best as I can, woping my mouth and pressing my head on the cold porcelain of the tub. "I wasn't until I smelled dinner "

She winces. "Do you want me to throw it out?"

"Fuck yes I do," I whisper, abandoning the tub to lie on the floor. The cold tiles feel amazing against my body.

1. y. "I-I'm sorr

sorry. But, please throw it out."

She nods frantically, disappearing to chuck our supper.

What the fuck is wrong with me? I used to love fried catfish. In Miami I would eat it at least once a week at a place on Beach Avenue. The smell would be heavy in the air mund the ht establishment and I can thoroughly remember that it did not bother me. Just then, my nose catches on something else that burns my belly. Pe four cleaner. I jerk upright, positioning myself over the toilet again as a concerned Emily strides back into the restponi

"Did you clean the floor here, Emily? To

'Today?"

She talks, looking somewhat taken aback. "Ub - yeah I did. Should I not have?"

I wave an arm at her, indicating that she should shut up as I begin to dry heave. Tud Isap, when the spasms are over. Suddenly I can smell everything in this place. Including her gaudy floral perfume. Obs. What the fuck? "Something's wrong with me. I think I need fresh air," I say, reaching up for her arm. "Help me get

up

But the moment she leans downward I snack her away and hold my breath. Her per i making neti. "Nevermind," I squawk, pushing up from the tub for Support. "Back away from me."

2/3

12:55 Thu. Nov 14

Chapter Seventy-Six

particulier. Right before another

I post myself onto its feet and lean

of our porch. "Call Alan. Fired him

and been munity days it a been. Holy shit. It's been fat weeks.

You probabl

"Emily ways. Trying to

for me past to have

(her and her horrible pumpent

it I think I might be pregnant."

Chapter Comments

Visitor

Loving this book

Karolina Kowalczyk

POST COMMENT

so good until this point. why the werewolf story always get the pregnancy plot just after marking, this story would be equally good without this plot, so...sorry but no need. [VIEW ALL 4 COMMENTS](#)

11

< [SHARE](#)

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,645 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Seventy-Seven

DRAVEN

"Oh my God! I can smell anything!" I shout, rolling over in bed as Adam steps into the room. The subwood floor vibrates between my ears at maximum decibel. What the fuck? Why are

"You can smell everything? Adam asks with a frown. As he approaches, my senses come back. Domonic's hair smells too much like the

if I'm pregnant, then at least one of them deserves to know

room. The sound of his expensive sneakers on the floor!

in they duly clip the

weave of nostalgia. The memory of waking up in Domonic's bed suddenly

I didn't have so many questions I would say fuck the sea and tons of

"What is going on, Domonic?" asks Adam, taking a whiff of the air around me while taking a seat next to the bed. His nose scrunches up and I know right away he can probably smell the vomit on me somewhere. After all, I'd been sick only a few moments before. "Emily said there was an emergency. Are you feeling unwell

"You smell just like him," Domonic says, my eyes suddenly burning with tears. The scent of Domonic's hair is still fresh in my mind. "Why did I never notice it before?"

His eyes wide

"This. You smell like your son."

How would you know that? Unless" He winces, falling back against the seat. "you're pregnant."

I grimace. Fuck, I know it

Surprisingly enough, his normally somber face lights up with joy and the deep dimple in his cheek he gives me is a definitely Domonic smile. "Yes, yes, you are. And the fact that you can smell as well as you can, tells me it's a boy." He chuckles. "A grandson. I'm going to have a grandson"

"I'm pregnant with a wolf cub? In my uterus? Crazy as it might sound, that doesn't upset me, I glance down at my flat stomach and sigh, my hand closing over it protectively. This is nuts."

He laughs jovially. "No dear. A wolf shifter doesn't usually have their first shift until after puberty. So rest assured, what you are carrying at this moment is human form. Then his smile falters and he clears his throat. "If you are pregnant, which I'm ninety-nine percent certain, you are- does that mean, you'll be heading back?"

I sneer at him, jolting spright. "Hell no. Letting out a slow, trembling breath, I cross my arms over myself in an attempt to hold myself together against the sudden aching of my heart. I do miss Dumonic and I will tell him about the baby. But - not yet."

Henoch, clapping his hands together happily. "Good"

I quirk an eyebrow. "Not what I was expecting you to say."

He shrugs. "Well, I haven't seen my son in five years. He says he hates me. He thinks I'm weak. But I still love him, and I want him to have his family, I only wish he'd join us here. He is the rightful Alpha. He needs to take his place among us before one of the other young wolves challenges for leadership and he loses his birthright." "Can that happen?" I ask, a strange sense of alarm coursing through me.

"It could." He frowns, his eyes settling somewhere behind me. "Gabriel has been a bit more trouble than I would have liked."

"Gabriel? Really?"

He nods, "Oh yes. And don't think I haven't noticed all the attention he's been showering you with."

I shrug. "Thee him. He's handsome and he's nice to me."

"You're marked," Adam scolds playfully.

"And alone," I scold back. Then, shaking my head, I add, "but nothing will come of it specially not now that I might be pregnant." Chewing on my lip, I turn toward the window and the fast approaching dark of the mountain sky. "Maybe it's finally time I give Bart a call." I think that's a wonderful idea. His father misses him. Argon is actually the only member of the Elder Council that still speaks to his son. Perhaps if you tell Bartlett

1/3

Chapter Seventy-Seven

you be pregnant, Dumonic might do it's rally time to show his face."

I shake my head. "I doubt it." Then, turning away from the window I admit, "And I'm not so certain that I'm ready to see Dominic"

den reaches out, pitting my hand before going it a fatherly squeeze. "You should tell him sooner than later. Give him the opportunity to truly realize what he's missing out on. You alone may be the key to his homecoming" With a sigh, he sits forward and I intake another greedy inhale of his pine cinn goodness. "Domorie sūd kanat forgiven me for Irving Port Orchard after the fire. But one day he'll have to realize - it was just too painful for me to go on there. The love of my Ide wan dead. I uw nothing good that could come from our staying in that cursed town. Clamping his eyes shut for a moment, he shakes himself as if chasing some old

I love that town," I remark, pating my own longing toward the back of my mind.

nella used to love it too," Adam says softy, his eyes dining. You remind me of her in some ways. She had a thing for fog and gray

Ipin Bounds to me like she was EVERME.

he whispers." In a way, I'm touched that he and the rest of the boys are determined to find the killer. But, at the same time, I know his mother wouldn't him living in the shadow of her death" He frowns. "She would want him with his mate. Leading her with his mate. Living a full life. The life he was meant to have. Especially now that

"Wait!" I snap as I notice my siding His sent is settling my stomach! What the ? Come and sit on the bed," I say, closing my eyes as I drop back

I don't think that would be appropriate. He laughs, but I hear the scrape of the chair legs on the oalwood floor. "But I will sit a bit closer."

fet," I say, inhaling once again and smiling against the soothing sensations that come with his aroma. "Oh my God. That's wonderful.

He chuckles. "It's common for pregnant female to be soothed by her mate's presence of for no other reason than that, you should call him."

My

shoot open and glare. More out of itation than anger. He's right. Dumondes deserve to know about his baby-if there a one-but not today. "I don't want to," I say. 72 least not yet. It won't change anything that hes alady done to me. I still hate him."

"I understand," he replies. Then I'll go and get a p

a pregnancy test from the market. Maybe after you confirm what I already know, you'll feel differently."

I shake my head, "You're not going anywhere. Sit your ass down. Send Emily. She smells like a fucking greenhouse."

DOMONIC

I got your mess

message. What's up?" Koda asks the moment he walks into my house to find me staring at the wall, deep in thought..

I gaze at him and I wonder. Is he the one who sent Draven to my father? Or was it Barier? Maybe, it was both of them. Either way, it doesn't matter. Now, at least I know where she is and I don't have to worry as much. At the same time, knowing that I can see her if I want to has induced the quivering palpitations of my already trembling heart.

"What if I told you, I know where they are. What would you say?"

His eyes widen and his jaw clenches. "Where are they?"

The look in his eyes. The relief, the barely contained excitement. All of it says that he not the one who went there-That he didn't know, I sigh, burying my face in my hands for a long moment. The one place I swore never to go."

"Koda stops. "What the fuck do you mean? Canada?"

I nod, throwing the empty bottle of scotch I was holding across the living room to shatter against the wall. "I think it was Bartlett. He sent them there," I grow "And I don't know whether to thank him or kill him."

Koda shakes his head, his face turning red with anger. All those unmuted wolves. Fuck

anyone

Right. That part had occurred to me. Probably because Draven is marked and her son alone would have told my father who she belonged to. I don't think would be dumb enough to touch her, but I don't know that for certain. At the same time, my father may be an asshole, but it would be a cold day in hell before he

another man touch a marked female. Especially, my marked female.

2/3

153%

Chapter Seventy-Seven

"Fuck!" Roda repeats, leaping from his seat to stalk toward the bat. He takes a drink my best tequila straight from the bottle, and because I'm feeling strangely charitable at the moment, I let it slide. Where's Margo?" He hisses

I chuckle. Sent her packing an hour ago, lames had to fucking drag her out."

Koda nods, taking another drink, despite that this time, I glare. "So what are we going to do? even know that I, 1

sight, bis eyes falling closed. "She's unmarked. She doesn't

"Love her?" 1 supply.

He growls, "want her."

I grin, tossing my feet up on the ottoman and smiling sadistically at his pain. "Wimt her? Really?"

"Fuck you, Dom," he chirps with a grin. Dropping down in the seat text to me, he groans. These rules..." he trails off, letting the sentence hang with a shrug of his shoulders. "Fack! And we swore we'd never step foot in that town" "Yeah," I reply. "I know"

"At the very least," he says. "I want to see her."

I nod standing up and jingling my keys. Then I hope you're off duty. Because I think it's time we took a drive:

Chapter Comments

POST COMMENT

Visitor

Book is fantastic but watching adds for rewards and when you finish watching the adds it says Opps and I don't get any rewards. every time

[VIEW ALL 2 COMMENTS >](#)

11

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,858 words]

apter Seventy-Eight DOMONIC

On the way out of town, Koda and I decide to stop at the bar so that I can throw all shade Bartlett's way before we leave. The place is a fatle begier might than it has been the entire month that Draven has been gone, but it's not anything compared to what it was when she was here. She really did have a way with the customers. They were drawn to her in a way that was disturbingly better, but none only serves as a reminder of how special she is. The moment I see Bartlett, I notice he is on the phone and looking ridiculously happy, I freeze, moving back into the shadowed hallway and hoping he hasn't yet noticed my presence. The music in here is too loud for me to hear the voice of the person he's talking to, but I can hear him just fine.

"I could try and head over there after closing, but I have to be back before morning. He says solemnly. "So maybe it's best if I wait until next week. That way I can meet someone to take over and stay a couple of days."

Does he have a replacement?

I chuckle

to myself. It's about time he got laid. Maybe if the bastard has something dip into he can stay out of everyone else's business.

"Really? He says into the phone and my muscles tense. Gabriel? What? I don't think you should be hanging out with him, kiddo. He's a bit of a womanizer"

Gabriel? As in THE GABRIEL? The one whose father tried to challenge my dad for his position as Alpha all those years ago?

Could Bartlett be on the phone with Draven right now

Calm yourself Dumani, it probably but what you think. But who else does he call kiddo we'll see.

Backing out of the bar before he can notice me I jog back to my hummer and dive back behind the wheel.

"What'd he say? Roda asks.

I p down the alley behind a few businesses so that Bartlett does see my car as we leave, "Nothing. I don't speak to him"

I creep

Koda chuckles, "Okay. Not even gonna ask."

I groan, turning toward the highway. "You remember David? The wannabe Alpha that challenged my dad about seven years ago?"

Koda nods, saying nothing as he gazes out the window into the fallen sun.

"What was his son's name again? Gabriel, wasn't it?"

'I think it was 'Yes.'

"That's what I thought," I say, turning onto State Highways Sixteen and pushing my speed to well above ninety.

For most, traveling at this speed is dangerous, but not for shifters. Not only because we heal faster and better, but because our eyesight is a lot stronger. I have to wonder, with Gryffin not being able to shift, have his other senses been affected? I should have asked him. Because if those things at least, are still intact, then there's a strong possibility that his lion may return without help. Or maybe, he just needs proper motivation. It's been my mind a lot lately. I feel partially responsible. After all, he would never have been in any danger if he wasn't trying to help keep Draven safe. Shot if you see a State Trooper, I joke.

Koda chuckles. Once we get into Canada, that may become a very real problem if you don't slow down."

"Right," Lager. "Just trying to cut down on as much drive time as I can."

"How did you find out where they were?"

I grin with a shake of my head. "Gryllin came to see me today. He says Taedora's been making weekly trips out to Vancouver alone."

Koda shorts, "Christ. That doesn't mean anything."

1/3

Chapter Seventy-Eight

I rub my chest, noting that for the time that the ache has begun to subside. Almens if, it knows I am on the right track, I smirk at him. "What does your heart tell you?"

He glares at the dash, looking away from the scenery to take inventory of what he's seeing. A look of satisfaction washes over his face as he smiles. "Onward Holmes. I think you may be onto something"

I laugh, flooring the accelerator and upping our speed to a hundred and ten.

DRAVEN

Staring down at the pregnancy test a wave of love engulfs me, chasing away the aching in my chest and the nervous thumping of my heart.

Fix pregnant.

ly and I'm going to be a mydomonic, you asshole! Why did you have to be such a fucking pussy and chase me away There's a little life inside my belly i from you? Why?!

"Chances are he wouldn't want it anyway." I say to myself, tossing the box in the trash and staring at myself in the bathroom mirror. It was only important that he fuck me, not keep me. Dann hies. God knows what he might say about my having his baby. Who knows. This confirms it. Domonk hed to me, back in Port Orchard. Dotsonic said Margo was his mate. And even though Adam told me the moment I got here, that Domenic had to have-saying Domonic wouldn't have marked me if it were true I wasn't bully sure I believed him until now. But why elke that? Just to keep me ? AGAIN? A thinks thats why he did it. A noble excuse for his only son, I guess. Adam thinks Domonic was terrified of my being so close to where his mother was killed, that he pushed me away to prevent my meder. He says when his wife and the other were killed, Damselc and the rest of them came up with a set of rules. Kule number one? No mates. Not for any of them. What kind of self depriving shit is that?

I pose there is something redeeming about Domonicast wanting me sadeur Mom, Domonic? Really? That's pretty far to send someone you want to be able to rescue. The idiot. I'm sure that's why Bart sent us here. At least he had the right idea This would have been the ideal spot for a safe haven and I have to wonder why he didn't choose it. Then again, I've learned way more about the pest from Adam than I ever did from the boys in Port Orchard. Maybe Domonic wanted his secrets to remain locked behind closed lips.

Everyone I've met in this town as well as Pail back in Port Orchard have said a male shifter can only reproduce with his mate. According to the experts", a female shifter can get pregnant by anyour. Therefore, women rule. Haha fellas, we win again. As it is, I might fuck with Domanie's head a little bit, Give him a call and tell him I'm pregnant with Gabriel's baby, just to be a bitch. He deserves it. That's the truth

But, when I picture the child in my womb being bom, I don't see myself alone. I see him. Demonic. I envision him at my side for the entire birth, then I picture him holding our child in his arms when it's done. But... it's just a daydream. What happens when the fool decides its too risky for me to be wandering around breathing The Tree? Will he lock me away? Build a fireproof jail just for me?

The more I yearn for Domonics arms around me, the more my resolve seems to be crumbling. Even now, alone in this restroom, I am playing with the idea of calling him

just to hear him say hello. Who knows, maybe the answer to what I should do about this will come to me with the sound of his voice.

I called Bart earlier. I didn't tell him about the pregnancy, but God I wanted to. He promised to be here next week, so I suppose. I'll have to wait. I can tell him and Taedora at the same time. Adam has already agreed to keep this between us. He says it might be best if no one around here knows I am carrying the Alpha's child. At least until the Alpha shows up. According to him, the knowledge might create a surge in the struggle for power among the younger wolves and the Elder Council. I don't see how that would be, but I'm new to all this shit. Everyone I've met so far has been exceedingly polite to me. But then again, I haven't met many people. In the past month Emily and I have mainly kept to ourselves. We only ever leave the college to walk along the path through the forest, or do a little fishing at the river. Gabriel has accompanied us almost every time.

The only scary part about living here was the night of the last full moon. When all of the men shifted and were gone for the entire night. It was like a ghost town. All that were left here were women, and truth be told, the girls here haven't been the friendliest. A knock on the bathroom door shakes me out of my reverie.

"Y-yes?" I call out, washing my hands and tucking the positive test strip safely away in the cupboard.

"I await the word of the princess?" Adam teases through the walls

Sighing. I spin around and open the door to meet the excitement of Adam's gaze. I tell he's trying to look careless, but the hope is there, practically shimmering

in the gray of his eyes. I give him a barely perceptible nod and the grin he rewards me with warms me to my bones.

knew it, he whispers, wiggling his head back and forth like he just won at a hand of cards

2/3

Chapter Seventy-Eight

"Yeah, I know," I remarked, glancing toward the room for Em. "Where is she?"

He chuckles. "I may have suggested that she toss out her perfume and take a nice long shower."

"Nice!" I say, walking him toward the front door.

Inod, 'I will come by in the morning. It's probably best if you stay home for awhile. You don't want to get sick somewhere in town or by the river and blow this thing out of the

water. And don't forget, if anyone asks, Emily had a false alarm. They won't question it, after all, she is unmarked and she is also the one who was seen at the store purchasing the test." "Right." I agree, frowning a bit at his mention of her being humarked. 'Is being bed such a big deal around here?"

He shakes his head. 'Not if you're family. A female born of a shifter's mate can stay unked as long as fate allows without any repercussions. But amateless hunan, living among shifters - well- it's only a matter of time before she's considered he clears his throat-"loose." "Loose?" I nearly shriek. "Emily is not loose!"

He shrugs, "Well, when the two of you first arrived, the feline scent on her was really quite strong. I know she's not loose, and you know she's not. But I'd be lying if said there hasn't been talk of her being a lady of besser morals."

"Well its bullshit! Rumors! Who's saying that? I'll have Gabriel set them straight!"

Adams gaze narrows apologetically, "Just whom do you think started such talk, my djur?"

"What?"/1 gasp, not fully comprehending what he's trying to say. "Who?"

Adam laughs, shaking his head. "Gabriel did. That's who,"

Chapter Comments

9

POST COMMENT NOW

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,685 words]

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Seventy-Nine

DRAVEN

My muscles tense. No. No way. I mean, I did sort of notice that Gabriel didn't seem to the ber mark, but Hiped it was just beca idea he was making asumptions about her. "You've got tri be kidding me "Im not," Adam says.

namma my eyes, stroking my arms over my chest and glaring at the street deftly. In be
bor

Adam chuckles, wagging his finger in my face in warning. Hex at his fam in only serve
to spark his already feeble sell control. Do not say a word."

And good

Rolling me over, I give Adam a quick

the check. Th

But Em supposed to have breakfast with him tomorrow and if begins Emily so much as

The smile Adam gives me reminds me so much of Demonic that my throat constricts.
No snapping. Remember you tomorrow. Don't hesitate to call me over should you need
me."

Most promise, watching him walk over the lawn to his house next door.

but you're carrying and stayi

We smile at each other as he disappears inside and for a moment I take a deep breath
to keep my emotions at bay. I never knew my com chance. The thought that Demonic is
so fucking inconsiderate of his own boils my insides, I mean sure, he lost his mom, but
his father is still here and lonely without him.

Right then, I make myself a promise. No matter what the outcome is between Demonic
and me - I will never abandon the man who took us in Adam is going to be a constant
part of my baby's life and if Demonic has a problem with that, he can go right to hell. By
himself too. Because

Adama pain..

Furn, the trees are so vibrant tonight. Normally when it gets dark out, the whole of the
woods becomes as black as a But tonight I can see the color of the leaves, The grooves
along the bark. Even the dirt path behind the houses. The moon even appears brighter,
not to mention that I can see the enters along its face. "I'm dunned," I whisper. All my
senses seem to be heightened. How cool is that? "Have the tickets always been this
damn loud?" I say before shutting the door and the lock

Glancing toward the kitchen, my nose scrunches up. I can still smell the fried catfish
open the backdoor leaving the screen latched and kitchen window create a cross rece. I
need to force out the smell. Apparently this kid doesn't like catfish. Opening the fridge, I
take stock of what's inside. Yogurt, leftover chicken... steak!!!

watering as I unwrap the paper encasing

"Oh yeah," I sing, whipping the red meat out and grabbing a cast iron p

pan. My mouth begins watering both steaks on a fresh cutting board, I grab the butter and light a burner under the pan. Then, as I cut half a stick of butter to the beat. I reach to my left and bring the raw steak to my lips. Nibbling on it while the butter melts over the herbs. The added to the pan. This is going to be so good." I gurgle through

"Dravent?!" Enely shrieks, coming into the kitchen from the hall. Her hair is wrapped in a towel and she smells like fresh apples. "What the fuck are you eating?"

"Huh?" I say, noticing for the first time that I've devoured half of a new I

bringing the bloody steak away from my lips guiltily. "Fuck me"

Guest the bo

baby likes it rare.

Let me

"Let me have that," Emily placates, taking the steak from my hand and nudging me out of the kitchen. I think I'll take over from here."

"I say with a roll of my eyes. But the smell of the bloody beef is still on my tongue and for some reason it only makes me hungrier. "I want mine extremely She nods slowly, granting me an astonished smile. So it's true. You're preggy

Hip her off and stomp toward the sofa to switch on the LE

at me from the other side of the half-wall divider. "Does this mean you're finally going to call Domoc?"

1/3

Chapter Seventy-Nine

fles attempt to sound nonchalant is

I've seen her this past week, staring

"Did you kosse," I say, Hipping through

Channels arad avadding her question. That talk in your sleep?".

do?" She Bunches. "That's crazy

"Yes, you do," I informs her with a smug.

Anything intelligible

I grin, chuckling to myself as I settle on a return of The Other Bast one wood, Kada.

Even with my newfound wolf shifter senses I don't see the spatula un

macks me in the leg. "That's not funny," she hisses. "Don't fuck with my head."

"I'm not. Yesterday when you were napping on the couch, you called baa nume there damn times."

"Pack you" she usaps, slapping a plate on the counter with a little more force than my new hearing is comfortable with

"Relax" I soothe. "I called Bart today. He says he's never seen Boda as irritable as he been this past month. Apparently the boy starts fights with anything

"Really?" Emily replies, and I don't miss the half smile that quirks across her lips. "Did you ask about Domonic? She inquires, coming around the kitchen counter with my beet

I bown. "No. I was going to, but... I just didn't. Sighing, I cut into the steak sloppily, sing when it ones blood. Perfect. "Bart said Domonic beat him up pretty badly when he figured out he dropped us at the train station and not at the airport. It pissed me off and I decided that was all I needed to beat" "How did he find out? Emily gushed, her eyes going wide.

I cock an eyebrow. "Koda, apparently."

"Really..." She coos. "So Koda was looking for us?"

I shrug. "That's my guess."

DOMONIC

la as we turn onto the dirt road that leads to the Red Wolf Lode. "We're almost there."

"Wake up," I snap at Koda as we

Koda sparks to lie, rubbing his eyes and rolling down the window to take a deep inhale of the air outside.

"Anything!" I ask, rolling mine down as well.

"Not yet," he says. "But my chest pains are gone."

I grin. So she is your mate."

"Shut up," he says, straightening in seat and tilting head to stare at me for a long moment. "What's the plan? Are we going to head in when we get there, or what?"

I sigh, glancing up ahead at the lodge before pulling in and parking in front of the main office. "I don't know," I admit. "I think I just need to see her"

Right," he chuckles. "Sure."

We hop out of the hummer and step into the lobby. Every single employee in the space is instantly alert. Each pair of eyes drift towards questioningly

"We need a couple of rooms," I say to a young female behind the counter. Taking af of the air as I hand her my credit card, I note the faint woll smell on her.

2/3

Chapter Seventy-Nine

She's pack. Probably a daughter of sodurone I know, but I can't tell who just yet.

"Of course," she says with a smile, her eyes falling over me appreciatively as she bites her lip,

-Oh for fuck's sake.

She's pretty enough, sure. But she can't be more than seventeen years old and I'm pretty sure that her father wouldn't want her coming on to strange wolves that wander into this place. She can't know who I am, can she? Maybe... I mean, I never mingled with many of the female daughters of park members back when I was younger. I didn't see the point. None of them were allowed out much anyway, on account of their not being able to shift. Most of them were homeschooled and locked behind closed doors. That doesn't seem to be the way things are run anymore. For the first time, I'm left to wonder who their Alpha is and what kind of system he has in place.

"Here you go, Alpha Demonic. Two of our very best suites."

My body freezes and I sense Koda tense as well behind me. "What did you call me hissed.

She flashes me a thousand kilowatt smile. "My name is Bridgette, Alpha Domunic. She giggles. "I can feel your energy. It's a very special talent of mine. My dad sys I'm lucky

because I'm the only one of the pack females that shows any promise. Here are your keys." I nod, leaning in to whisper in her ear. "Listen Bridgette, can you do me a favor?"

She smirks, leaning forward to press her cleavage forward "Anything.

Fucking hell. Her father needs to teach her how to act like a proper young lady. But, this is not beyond using her attraction to me to my advantage. "Can you keep our arrival a secret? I don't want anyone to know we're here until our visit tomorrow." I smile at her and allow my eyes to roam over her body like I'm checking her out. When my mind really just admires the polished marble floor at her back.

She grins, cocking an eyebrow. "Got it," she winks before biting her lip

her lip again and pointing us toward the inner stairwell.

"No elevators," Roda comments to me as we climb to the second floor then step out into a private hallway. The inside looks a lot more modern than the outside."

The two best suites that she mentioned seem to be the only two rooms on this floor, After we enter the first, out onto the back balcony to stare into the woods. "Remember," I tell him. "We find them first then we watch from a safe distance."

"Heard," he says, his eyes already widening as he begins to shift right here on the punch.

"Shall we?" I say, grabbing onto a branch that peers over the edge of the railing

that, the pair of us strip down to our underwear and saunter

"Absolutely," he says, through a mouthful of teeth before climbing onto the railing to drop down to the ground below.

Swinging off the branch, I do a backflip in the air and shift before I hit the ground. Right away her scent hits me. A glance to my right says Koda's wolf has sniffed out the same.

The guard nearby.

Here I come baby.

Chapter Comments

KKN

can't wait for the next chapter

[VIEW ALL 2 COMMENTS](#)

POST COMMENT

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[2,717 words]

3/3

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates Chapter Eighty DOMONIC

Koda and I prowl through the backwoods. Careful to move around the giant wall that rounds the grounds of Village Du Loup Rouge. I spotted two armed guards near the front of the complex. Young wolves, neither of which I recognize. I have to wonder, did our pack truly separate as I was told they did all those years ago? Or did they relocate and merge with another pack somewhere out here on Crown Mountain?

Moving along the base of the forest, where we won't be scented, I count the rooftopsible beyond the wall. All the while sniffing for the familiar scent of my mate. I finally find it coming from about two miles in. I shift back into human form right here and climb the nearest tree, settling on a branch high enough to take in the town hidden behind the gate.

What I see takes my breath away. Cottages line the street on both sides. A marketplace and towns all at the forefront. I smile to myself as I realize that there doesn't seem to be a packhouse. Nope. This is a pack town. Kind of like we structured ourselves around Port Orchard after the rest of our people left.

Fil he donned

I'm curious who the Alpha is. I'm going to have to meet him. Tomorrow of course. It's too late tonight. It's already one in the morning and most of the windows are dark. A sudden weight shakes the branch I'm on and I don't need to look to know it's Koda who has climbed up next to me.

"Holy shit," he says in obvious wonder. "Is that our pack?"

"Village of the Red Wolf," I say. "Assume we're in there somewhere. But I didn't recognize the guards, so our fathers must have merged with another."

"Interesting."

I sigh. They're

re in there somewhere. They're in one of those cottages. Let's head back We'll head over Ent thing in the morning. I'd like to try and get in without alerting my father if we can help it."

Kada sighs, gritting his teeth. "My little brother is there somewhere. He'd be ten no

I glance at him, shaking my head. "We should try to avoid seeing them if it's possible. But if you insist on seeing him, you do it after I leave."

He nods. "Maybe we can get the Alpha to tell me something about him instead."

I chuckle. "Don't be stupid. Just because I refuse to see my dad, doesn't mean you need to refuse to see yours."

His eyes usap toward mine. "I don't want to see mine rither.

00

"Right," I say. "I forgot." Rodas dad was pretty abusive. When Koda's mother died in the fire, the man only got worse. The reason Koda didn't keep his little brother when the rest of the pack left, was because the boy didn't want to stay. He didn't want to be reminded of losing his mother. "Well definitely check on your brother

boo

Koda smiles sadly. "Maybe he'll agree to come back with us. It's been long enough."

"Maybe," I agree, swinging down from the tree and shifting back into my wolf in the

Back at the lodge, the two of us climb back up the balcony naked. The moment I open the sliding glass door to the suite, I sent him.

it switch. "What the fuck are you doing in here?"

"Goddamn it." I snap, flipping on the light

"Hello son," my father says from the amchair closest to the front door. "I was wondering how long it would take your stubbom ass to come and get your mute."

1 growl, stepping inside the room and nodding at Koda as he excuses himself to head for his own suite. "Get some rest," I tell him as he grabs his discarded clothes then steps into the front hall completely naked. Once the door clicks shut, I turn my angry eyes back on my father. "How did you know I was here?"

He chuckles, lighting up a cigarette and taking a deep drag. I've been scouting the lodge every night since Draven showed up. I was hoping you weren't quite dumb enough to let her go completely. Glad to see I was right about that, if nothing else." He shakes his head at me, disappointment filling his eyes. "Your mother would be assumed of

1/3

Chapter Eighty

"Tuck you." I sup. You don't get to thi

thit shout my

my mother. You're the

He takes another hit of his cigarette, his eyes filling with momentary sadness. Testo por just as close minded an

"I'm only here to check on Draven and meet your Alpha," I him, pulling on my jeans. Then 10 be heading back

For some reason my Red Wolf Pack

ry statement strâkes him as funny. He begins to laugh so hard that be chokes

the Alpha, of the

I glare, a cold chill trembling over my body like ice in my blood. The Red Wolf Pack. "What are you saying? You told me our pack brok

He grins, reaching for the ashtray on

un the coffee table and putting out his cigarette as slowly as possible. "It did." His eyes shoot up before continues, From you."

I stomp toward the sofa and take a seat, still scowling at my father with hateful end I suppose a

a new Alpha was named. Or is it still

He grins and I know what be about to tell me is

me is going to make me en anger. "Wermed a new Alpha." He sighs. "And you're him"

My body tenses with fury, my fangs slicing out. "What?"

"I stepped down the moment we finished building the town. Naming you as my or You, Domic, are the Alpha of the Red Wolf Pack. And your people have been awaiting your homecoming for quite some DRAVEN

I awaken to the smell of bacon and egg floating through my open bedroom doorway and I jolt upright, sliding my eyes from the scattered sunlight through the Venetian blinds. "Fucking Emily," I hiss before leaping forward to puke my guts out in the bathroom toilet. Maybe it's grease the baby doesn't like. Just now, the thick smoke of the bacon is what churned my belly. The egg, not so much. "Emily?" I shout, as I stand to brush my teeth.

"Yes my love?" She sings, stepping into my room with a set of tongs in her hands. She stops short when she sees me brushing my teeth, a murderous look in my eyes.

"Great today don't you? I mean, I wear - I haven't had chest pain all day!" She says, she looks at the toilet and the splatters of vomit that remain on the

floor. "Please don't fry anything else, I hiss, spitting in the sink. Do we have any of the

She rights, "Yeah, We do, is that what you'll be having?"

She rights, the toothpaste fuming around my mouth and dripping into the sink. "Yuck

"Are you

"up"

are you being gross on

in purpose?

She cringes, stepping away from me with a look of pure disgust. "Gabriel was here. I told him you were sick. He said there's a special visitor today and the council is holding an emergency meeting. He told me to tell you he'd check on you after. He said it was imperative that he be there to greet the visitors." I take a couple of shallow breaths to contain my nausea. "Good. After what Adam told me last night, it's better if I don't see him yet anyway." Because I want to tear

his balls off for spreading rumors about you, "So what were you saying about chest pains?" I ask, washing the sink and replacing my toothbrush.

"They're gone!" She croons, doing a little dance around my

"How are you?"

I stop for a moment, taking a slow inventory of all that I'm feeling. I think - none are gone too. How weird"

"Maybe at a finally been long enough," she shrugs, heading back down the hall toward the kitchen...

But something tells me, that's not it at all. Adam said that when mates were in constant pain whereparated. One of the most common occumecees was chest pains. Of course, I hadn't told Emily what he said, to the wouldn't know any better. But I did. The absence of chest pains could only mean one thing. And that one thing I certainly prepared for

The Pack: Rule Number 1 - No Mates

Chapter Eighty

DOMONIC

Koda and I prowl through the backwoods. Careful to move around the giant wall that rounds the grounds of Village Du Loup Rouge. I spotted two armed guards near the front of the complex. Young wolves, neither of which I recognize. I have to wonder, did our pick truly separate as I was told they did all those years ago? Or did they relocate and merge with another pack somewhere out here on Crown Mountain?

Moving along the base of the forest, where we won't be scented, I count the rooftopsible beyond the wall. All the while sniffing for the familiar scent of my mate. I finally find it coming from about two miles in. I shift back into human feem right here and climb the nearest tree, settling on a branch high enough to take in the town hidden behind the gate.

What I see takes my breath away. Cottages line the street on both sides. A marketplace and towns all at the forefront. I smile to myself as I realize that there doesn't seem to be a packhouse. Nope. This is a pack town. Kind of like we structured ourselves around Port Orchard after the rest of our people left.

Fil he donned

I'm curious who the Alpha is. I'm going to have to meet him. Tomorrow of course. It's too late tonight. It's already one in the morning and most of the windows are dark. A sudden weight shakes the branch I'm on and I don't need to look to know it's Koda who has climbed up next to me.

"Holy shit," he says in obvious wonder. "Is that our pack?"

"Village of the Red Wolf," I say. Tassume we're in there somewhere. But I didn't recognize the guards, so our fathers must have merged with another."

"Interesting."

I sigh. They're

re in there somewhere. They're in one of those cottages. Let's head back We'll head over Ent thing in the morning. I'd like to try and get in without alerting my father if we can help it."

Kada sighs, gritting his teeth. "My little brother is there somewhere. He'd be ten no

I glance at him, shaking my head. "We should try to avoid seeing them if it's possible. But if you insist on seeing him, you do it after I leave."

He nods. "Maybe we can get the Alpha to tell me something about him instead."

I chuckle. "Don't be stupid. Just because I refuse to see my dad, doesn't mean you need to refuse to see yours."

His eyes usap toward mine. "I don't want to see mine rither.

00

"Right," I say. "I forgot." Rodas dad was pretty abusive. When Koda's mother died in the fire, the man only got worse. The reason Koda didn't keep his little brother when the rest of the pack left, was because the boy didn't want to stay. He didn't want to be reminded of losing his mother. "Well definitely check on your brother

boo

Koda smiles sadly. "Maybe he'll agree to come back with us. It's been long enough."

"Maybe," I agree, swinging down from the tree and shifting back into my wolf in the

Back at the lodge, the two of us climb back up the balcony naked. The moment I open the sliding glass door to the suite, I sent him.

it switch. "What the fuck are you doing in here?"

"Goddamn it." I snap, flipping on the light

"Hello son," my father says from the amchair closest to the front door. "I was wondering how long it would take your stubbom ass to come and get your mute."

1 growl, stepping inside the room and nodding at Koda as he excuses himself to head for his own suite. "Get some rest," I tell him as he grabs his discarded clothes then steps into the front hall completely naked. Once the door clicks shut, I turn my angry eyes back on my father. "How did you know I was here?"

He chuckles, lighting up a cigarette and taking a deep drag. Tve been scouting the lodge every night since Draven showed up. I was hoping you weren't quite dumb

enough to let her go completely. Glad to see I was right about that, if nothing else." He shakes his head at me, disappointment filling his eyes. "Your mother would be assumed of

1/3

Chapter Eighty

"Tuck you." I suppress. You don't get to thi

think shout my

my mother. You're the

He takes another hit of his cigarette, his eyes filling with momentary sadness. Testosterone just as close minded an

"I'm only here to check on Draven and meet your Alpha," I hear him, pulling on my jeans. Then I'll be heading back

For some reason my Red Wolf Pack

my statement strikes him as funny. He begins to laugh so hard that he chokes

the Alpha, of the

I glare, a cold chill trembling over my body like ice in my blood. The Red Wolf Pack. "What are you saying? You told me our pack broke

He grins, reaching for the ashtray on

on the coffee table and putting out his cigarette as slowly as possible. "It did." His eyes shoot up before continuing, "From you."

I stomp toward the sofa and take a seat, still scowling at my father with hateful eyes. I suppose a

a new Alpha was named. Or is it still

He grins and I know what he's about to tell me is

me is going to make me even angrier. "We've named a new Alpha." He sighs. "And you're him"

My body tenses with fury, my fangs slicing out. "What?"

"I stepped down the moment we finished building the town. Naming you as my or You, Domic, are the Alpha of the Red Wolf Pack. And your people have been awaiting your homecoming for quite some

DRAVEN

I awaken to the smell of bacon and egg finating through my open bedroom doorway and I jolt upright, siding my eyes from the scattered sunlight thre Ugh the venetian blinds. "Fucking Emily," I hiss before leaping forward to puke my puts out in the bathroom toilet. Maybe it's grease the baby doesn t bike. just now, the thick smoke of the bacon is what churned my belly. The e, not so much. "Emily?" I shout, as I stand to brush my teeth.

"Yes my love?" She sings, stepping into my room with a set of tongs in her hands She stops short when she sees me brushing my teeth, a murderous look is my eyes.

great today don't you? I mean, I wear - I haven't had chest pain all day!" kan," she 101, eyeing the toilet and the splotches of vout that remain on the

1 nod. "Please don't fry anything else, I hiss, spitting in the sink. Do we have any of the

She right, "Yeah, We do, is that what you'll be having?

sile, the toothplate fuming around my mouth and dripping into the sink. "Yug

"Are you

""up"

su being gross on

in purpose?

She cringes, stepping away from me with a look of pure disgust. "Gabriel was here. I told him you were sick. He said there's a special visitor today and the council is holding an emergency meeting. He told me to tell you he'd check on you after. He said it was imperative that he be there to greet the visitors."

I take a couple of shallow breaths to contain my nausea. "Good. After what Adam told me last night, it's better if I don't see him yet anyway." Because want to tear

his balls off for spreading rumors about you, "So what were you saying about chest pains?" I ask, washing the sink and replacing my toothariah.

"They r gone!" She croons, doing a little dance around my

"How are yours?"

1 stop for a moment, taking a slow inventory of all that I'm feeling. I think - une are gone too. How weird"

"Maybe at a finally been long enough," she shrugs, heading back down the hall toward the kitchen...

But something tells me, that's not it at all. Adam said that when mates were in constant pain whereparated. One of the most common occumeces was chest pains. Of course, I hadn't told Emily what he said, to the wouldn't know any better. But I did. The absence of chest pains could only mean one thing. And that one thing I certainly prepared for

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.